



18871

The Seuenth

Booke of the Myrour
of Knighthood.

Being

The Secret of the third Part.
Englished out of the Spanish language.

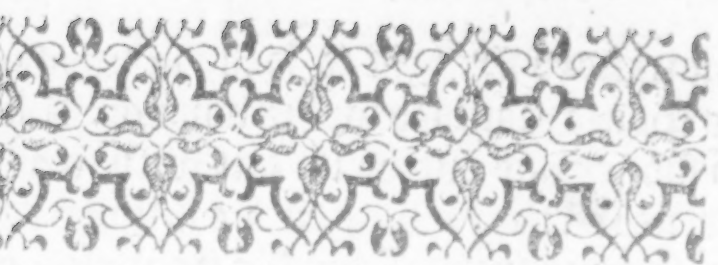
*Siendo la Dama sin par:
Soy sin segundō en amar.*



LONDON

Printed by Thomas Purfoot for Cuthbert Burby, and are to be sold at his shop
neere the Royall Exchange. 1598.





SECOND BOOKE OF

of the *Myrrour of Knighthood*,

the high and mightie deedes

Sonnes and Nephewes of

Emperour *Trebatio*, with

worthie actes of other

Princes & Knights.

the haughtie deedes of warlike

Claridiano and Ar-

Don Eleno of Dacia

and his *Rosamond*.

venture that happened vnto the *Dacian*
in *Calidonia*. Cap. I.

YC Imaginary thoughts of swift
desire, warring twixt Hope and
Viciozie, within the aspyring re-
solutiō of those aduēturous youths
of Greece, plowing the furious
Ocean in a well rigg'd Shippe to-
wards the Cholchian Isle, to im-
mortalize their Names, and with
eternall glozie, to guild y^e Trophees
with the laborious winning of the gol-
den fleece with lesse celeritie, then the in-
dustrious Eleno guided by the wise Nabato, fur-
ther Regions of Neptunes watrie King-
domme hee assayled the inchaunted Woods
of Brutus, was by his learned friend

full, in all vertues accomplisht, and his
M. William Willoughby of Grayes
Inne Gentleman.

holy writ (most worthy Sir) how that might-
mander of 127 Provinces, being by deserts of
bound to deeds of gratitude, the which as the
to expresse, & fearing to drowne them in ob-
e enrolled in the Annales of his acts, that the
ht after rememb'r him, how those merits being
enced, he still ought to guerdon. So fell it out
Chronicles of his age, and calling to memorie
magnifike honor sufficiently discharge it. This
ies well pondered, whether, o whether may I
content to haue transgrest against the sacred
s, due for your benefits in number infinite, I
sinned against your loue, and wronged your
y willing promise made to your request (yet
you this last vacation in the countrey: which
th, (I must needs say) deservedly incurred
as the incensed heauens are by true contritiō
appeased of their wrath: So doe I not doubt
& this cause thereof shall purchase an exte-
re, & my offence, which first of all by confes-
& the your pardon washing away my sinne,
debtor for all your bounties, I sacrifice my
y transgression on the Altar of your accep-
y penitent hart, consuming the oblation, it
your reconciled grace from all obstacles of
force confesse it is an idle toy, hacht and
es, and therefore neither worthy your con-
terposed among the exercises of your va-
you will vouchsafe to looke thereon, thinke
h, did not refuse to drink out of a sheap-
erwithall waighing the loue & hart of the
fauour, & no more feare to be reiected

Euermore deuoted to your seruice,

L. A.



To the Friendly and Courteous Readers.



Length, on the vncertaine surges of your gentlenes I doe aduenture, of all necessities my vnfurnisht barke, leauing none other confidence but the generall acceptance of the History, safely to let me Anchor my desires on your contentments. This onely did imboulden me to satisfie the requests of many, and not the will to publish my owne folly, and disgrace: whose harsh and vnpleasing Methode the sequell amply shewes. In which I haue in many places addrest my speech, & directed the Historie as it were particularly to one or to more Ladies or Gentlewomen; wherein I must aduertise you, that is ment by no especiall *Mistres*, saue onely an imitation of my Author, & the rather because in loue discourses (and this story treating nothing else) they haue the sole preheminēce, as also hoping for their Ladies (to whom euery Mothers Sonne that mooues is adicted) to finde a more kinder intertainement: whose memorie I trust will impetrate it. My faults by the Printer omitted & aggrauated shall I amend, and though you do dislike, doe not (for my good will deserues it not) condemne me. Shall I neuer cease to crie (*Amen*) to your own wiues, and will ere long gratefie your fauours wyth another part, Meane while.

Cum desint vires, nostr' est laudanda voluntas.

F

ff

ff
d
e
s
s
d
h
s
d
e
s
d
d



25 *To the Friendly and Courteous Readers.*



T length, on the vncertaine surges of your gentlenes I doe aduenture, of all necessities my vnfurnisht barke, hauing none other confidence but the generall acceptance of the History, safely to let me Anchor my desires on your contentments. This onely did imboulden me to satisfie the requests of many, and not the will to publish my owne folly, and disgrace: whose harsh and vnpleasing Methode the sequell amply shewes. In which I haue in many places addrest my speech, & directed the Historie as it were particularly to one or to more Ladies or Gentlewomen; wherein I must aduertise you, It is ment by no especiall *Mistres*, saue onely an imitation of my Author, & the rather because in loue discourses (and this story treating nothing else) they haue the sole preheminēce, as also hoping for their sakes (to whom euery Mothers Sonne that moues is adicted) to finde a more kinder intertainment: whose memorie I trust will impetrate it. My faults by the Printer omitted & aggrauated gently amend, and though you do dislike, doe not (for my good will deserues it not) condemne me, so shall I neuer cease to crie (*Amen*) to your own wishes, and will ere long gratefie your fauours wyth another part, Meane while.

Cum desint vires, nostr' est laudanda voluntas.

The second Bo

Commanided straight to S
his Boate prouided for his
no sooner had entred it, b
it rent frō the land, as doth
boysterous winds, tumbl
keeping so admirable spæ
waters then did Vhises (e
his tenne yeares pilgrima
uer should anchor in any
cian Lirgandeo doth recoz
Seas, entring into the A
side the Cateonian Promon
the Caspian and Percian S
he fell into the nauigable
Famous Isle of Tylos, ce
temperature, whose Son
heate, nor Winter any ex
rate meane of both, her fi
flowered greene, nor spi
scarfe were some rype rea
their spæde in growth) w
blossomes, & the rest bzagt
and incredible was the ple
ceaued, beholding from th
of this soule-pleasing Cou
haue strucke his sayles, ac
chirping byrdes, whose ch
seft bubbling of the runni
sing thirt the trees, made
turall Musike, that it had
drowned his intended voy
templation of these wonde
nered the Chyistaline wat
upon whose borders the w
their memorable Empyze.
the fruitfull contrey of Beot

Booke of the third Part

to Sea, on whose shoare he should find
his voyage. The which he obeying,
it, but with such a tempestuous furie
doth a mighty rocke, & return'd with
tumble from aloft into the deepest seas,
spade, that in fewe days he past more
les (lost on the angrie waues) in all
grimace, which made him think he ne-
any harbor. For as the great Magi-
recorde, he first out-strippt the Italian
the African, and leauing on the one
romontorie he tooke his course, through
ian Seas, and in the end of eyght days,
gale Indian Ocean, coasting along the
os, celebated of all men for her great
Summer neuer knewe extremitie of
any excesse of cold, but keeping a mode-
her fields were neuer disrobed of their
springing trees of growing fruit: for
e readye for the gathering (such was
th) when others glozied with coloured
bragd of their verdure liueries. Great
the pleasure that the Dacian Prince con-
from the hatches the delightfull prospect
g Countrey, where willingly he would
les, accepting the kinde welcome of the
hose cherefull notes according with the
running streames of litle Riuersets, pas-
made such a melodious consort of a na-
it had almost rauished his senses, and
ed voyage in obliuio. But wapt in con-
wonders, he past along, & shortly disco-
e waters of Thermodons cleere Riuier,
s the war-like Amazons sometime held
npyze. He also in this navigation saue
of Beotia famosed by the Thespian land,

onely

of the Mirrour of Kn

onely mentioned through her border
Mount, the habitation of those sacred
sters, the diuine Muses, Loues. bray ne-
thers of all learned Arts. To be short, &
a delight, he compassed the most part of
being acquitted of Loues tributarie due
had the more scope to subiugate his th
of these things. So that now wearie
end vnto his trauaile, that he might
often tryed forces, to augment the perp
which he thought were ecclipsed in the
honor smothering bark, yet he stil per
great aduenture could not but awayt
gable toyle. At length passing the Fla-
cient times called Sydromades, (whose
passengers is pitilesse death) some fiue
led through the Mediterranean Sea, &
when glittering Phæbus mounted his fi
ran ashore to the Princes great conte
most tyred with this long nauigation.
himselfe in his rich armour, he leaped on
on his swift Tyrio, accompanied onely
Fabio, he tooke a narrow beaten path
went with great desire, to know in wh
So with an easie pace they trauailed n
it brought them into a great wood, w
sage somewhat amazed the Dacian Lo
to erpell the great delight he did concea
sting murmure of the pleasant win
daunce vpon the mouing of the shaken
whistling byrdes warbled their ditti
manner, that agreeing in one consort o
monie, it arrested the amazed conce
Prince, that continued his iourney alo
whose bending turnings brought him
ging head, whose purling brooke from

The second Booke of the third Part

my power to be yoked vnder her commaund)
take any serious conceipt at so sleight a trespass.
(both Fabio) women are so grieued by euery small
that little offences wayghed in their feminine
found to be excuses of inconstancie and selfe wa-
tion, and therefore are taken in the worst part:
only women conceiue whatsoeuer is done for
(for so reason requireth) proceede of duetie:
loued by any amorous inclination: & hers was
I may belecue her exterior motions, when you
in your combate. For by no better meanes doth
esse his loue towards the thing loued, then
seene in any perill, how small soeuer, which
such credit to my doubt, that I certainly
hath vttered a thousand complaints against
with that inward and entyre affection thee
And to conclude, her rare beawtied deserveth
can or am able to expresse.

erence was here abruptly broke off with the
(that stopped the Dacian lords reply) of a kee-
mouthed hounds, whose noise ecchoing through
gave him warning of some hunting sport, whose
already be on foote. As he was thus hark-
e comming towards him with impetous fur-
white Hart, with the whole troope of his pur-
es at his heeles, who wearie and faint with
to refresh him in that brooke. This course
ing the Prince (hauing bene in his youth
with such exercise, snatched his launce, and as
ed by, threwe it at him, and pierced his bodie
side, and yet not brake his speare, and as a
man he harted the hounds vpon their praie,
he hunters comming. But from these dumps
put with the sudden viewe of a most beaw-
that mounted on a gallant courser, galloped
her habit was of greene cut vpon white, im-

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

brodered with so many Pearles & Stones, that it dazled the beholders eyes when the bright beames of Apollos face reuerberated thereon, her amber haire in golden franelles hung about her shoulders, and on her head she wore a coronet of Roses that defended her against the offending heat of Phæbus rayes. And as she came in hast, her dangling tresses wauered in the ayre, that he assured him selfe that this was Cupids warre, seing his ensigne of her haire borne by such beautie, and defended with a Boar speare, which she carried in her hand: who in this manner approached our Dacian Knight, that with this first and sole sight became the little blind triumphing gods sighes tributary subiect, and by imagination lost the pleasure of his former libertie by gazing on so gallant a Ladie, that he acknowledged himselfe Loues captiue thzall, bowing in his hart such firmenesse, that his thoughts drowned in conceipts, stricke him with such a fearefull hope, that he almost lost his breathing senses, whereby the vnextinguishing flames of true loues fire so penetrated his free hart, that none but death could be the Physicke to cure so deepe a wound. The engyne of his speech so ceast his motiō, that in steed therof, he wisht all his moouing powers, were then transformed to so many piercing instruments of sight thoroughly to viewe her rarities, and yet did he thinke them insufficient to note all her perfections, because something would still remaine vnseen. Gladly would he haue changed his present state for hundred eyed Argos fortunes (though he should pay as dearly for his watching) if hee mought at his contented leysure, suruay all the excellencies, that glorious Nature in her prodigalitie had bestowed on her. For in his pensiue cogitations, he iudged this was shee the iust heauens had ordained to predominate his heart, his life, soule and will, & to whom he should acknowledge all soueraignetie ouer his due obedience, already esteeming his nauigable toiles well employed, since they brought him to so rich a land, to anchorage his wearie minde within the harbour of so braue a Road.

The second Booke of the third Part

his continuall currant through a pibblepaued channell, that gathering in one a many runnings, that from the naturall rocke did issue, seemed so many spouts proceeding from an artificiall fount, making the streame more great; whose sweete noyse could not but remoue the Melancholiest heart (though neuer so much tormented with loue-oppressing passions) euen from his deepest despairing thoughts. This pleasant spring was all incompassed with high cressend trees, proud Cedars, and loftie Wynes, whose height seemed to controll the firmament aloft, and scorne the lower plants beneath; whose humble growth was accompanied with greene Palmes, fresh Oliues, and odoriferous Orange trees, that euer flourisheth with springing habits. Through these (vpon the dyaperd ground, with flowered tapestrie) ranne the sportful wanton yong Deare, that in abundance increased the pleasure of this wooddie fount: for some scudded along to out-strip the others in running: others, nibbled the tender growing sapplings, and others together butted in wrangling pastime their horned foreheads. The Dacian wrapt in a suddain admiratiō with the vn hoped sight of such miracles, rested confounded in pleasant imaginations that perswaded him in a land so wonderfull of Natures wonders he should not but expect some vnlooked, vnconceaued, and immerited happinesse. Were to ease himselfe awhile, he alighted, and washed his sweatie face & hands in those coole refreshing waters, and then sitting on the grasse, satisfied his hungrie stomack with such prouision as Fabio his page had brought with him from his ship. The collation ended, they discoursed of many matters (to beguyle the time with all) especially, touching the Romane Ladies, whose affection towards him shewen by the Princeesse Roselia, was not of meane respect: wherevpon Fabio tooke occasion thus to beginne.

I cannot (deare Lord) sufficiently conceaue the hidden reasons of your strange proceedings in Loue. For when I remeber your extreame passions for the first robber of your heart

18871
of the Mirrour of Knight

heart Florisdama, your second dotting on
affection towards Roselia, with the
departure from her without a farewell
many fauors, which her accepting you
you in the highest degree of ingratitude
many other merites (which I list not
serued no such height esteeme. The con
things drownes my witts in vncertain
thinke when shee shall record her cour
courtesies, she will not call you a dis
flattering friend: & a wauering changi
not complaine of her ill aboading star
tune: and banne your remembrance:
otherwise hauing so great cause theret
Lord) awake your slumbring senses, a
the broken ruynes of your decaying credi
of your byrth be tainted: nor the royall b
ned with an infamous blott of thankles
not Roomes quarrell begunne in the
in the childezen, and be ended (God know
steritie. But pardon me (my Lord) for
mits of duety and the duetie of a seruant
and zeale to your reputation hath moued
Fabio (replied the Prince,) first thankin
I must confesse in some respect I stand
sight, for departing without her conse
knowes it was not either by negligent
thankfully reiecting her deserted merite
garde of her kindnesse, for which, and for
I euer shall rest debtoz. But leauing th
ded, the heauens in their iust doome haue
me (although her perfection a greater B
then me) which I do the more belceue
friend Nabato did assure me, it touched
life, not to speake to her at my departur
some vnwillingnesse) agreed vnto, he

The second Booke of the third Part

To be short, the haughtie invincible courage of his thoughts, were so amazed with this admirable gallant, that it could by no meanes resist so strong encounter, without farther combate, (for Fortitude is too weak to withstand the darts of beautie) presently yeelded her his as a trophie of her victorie, and yet rested sorrowfull, with no richer prizes to glorifie her triumphs, because her self deserved a greater conquest. So much amazed rested the valiant Dacian, as if altogether he were converted to her, on whome his gazing eyes were fixed, & so greatly, being nigh her, he could neither move the organs of his nor ought else, but by signes signifie, his awfull dutie commaund, being all in all hers. With no lesse adoration did the valiant Ladie with her eyes coate his features, because her troubled thoughts told her (that from fancy) shee had neuer seene a more braver Knight. As Ladies comonly in such accidents of amorous traunce lose a freer power of their speech: so shee perceiuing the same alteration of his colour-changing countenance, with some displeasure (that in like cases followeth all of her beautie and valour) shee awaked him with words.

Know not (Knight) what moued you so rashly to kill me, bereauing me of the pleasure that awayted my living: and he expected by receiuing his death at my hand: whereof your presumption by doing it, hath disposed both of. Don Eleno, drawing strength from his valiant soule, replied: O poore hart (most excellent Lady) I readie suffer his deserved penance, for so sinning against your content. Yet do I hope this offence, confessing it, shall be absolved of your displeasure, hauing been but a wel-meaning ignorance committed. For suppose I would except against mee, or take displeasure at what I haue done thereto. But good hath bene his exchange: the death he receiued (being ordained thereto) is lesse a wound haue your (diuine excellencies) pierced my

of the Mirror

my soule because the inward cut my thred of life, then the wound wounded by now aggravated my displeasure, giving greater displeasure poore Hart with death to the amorous Dacian, but then mounted on a mighty horse, hauing ouer heard part of this, vnto him.

A Knight more bold than so great a presumption, the valiant Dacian was so captiue, that his deepe affection in armour and so brauely in Loues competitor. When he was rapt at his breast, & at his shield, he laced on his horse, the Hart came thither, with body, leaping therewith, brandishing the speare, with words: Discourteous Knight, words: now shalt thou be with like pride entertained, full became the beauties of each other, greatly fearing the thought the stranger, them so fierce, with desires: For if she affects me, as her liues commaund, admitted in Cupids Schoole, yeelded to his deceipts, then forst her to be Judge of the Knight of the Forrest, but Prince with such haughtie would haue feared him.

Mirroure of Knighthood.

he impartiall fates (I feare) will sooner
then you will daygne the cure, to salue
ed by your selfe. Farre moze haue you
y discontent (answered the Lady) retea-
asure at your bolde wordes, then did the
each by your Launce. Answered would y
out that he saw a knight well armed and
ty horse, issue from among the trees, who
part of Don Elenos speech, cryed out

ld then valiant, take vp thy weapons, for
tion may not passe unpunished. The ba-
so captivated with the beautie of that La-
affection (seeing that knight in so gallant
uely Horse) made him thinke he was his
. Whereat a sudden thought of Ielousie
, & at without any word, taking vp his
his hearme: and with moze speede then
ether, he drew his Launce out of his dead
ewith into his Tyrios saddle, & in his hand
eare, he turned to his aduersary with these
ous knight, coragious in nothing but in
ilt thou see how I vse to thanke those that
ertaine others as you haue me. Sorrowe
auteous Lady, to see them so eager against
y fearing the successe of the fight, because
anger would haue the better: but seeing
drew her selfe, praying for both their vic-
affects the one as her brother, the other the
comander. And as she was a nouice new
s Schoole, with such willingnesse shee
pts, that with one and the like feare he
ge of that combate. Couragious was the
est, but hee hath before him the Dacian
haughtie thoughts, that Mars himselfe
him. With furie at length they mette in
C myddle

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Lady, sayde. Seeing my more then unhappie fortune (de-
villine Lady) hath permitted he should displease you, and in
this sort, that was only bozne to adoze you, soly desiring
life to please you, bethinke what satisfaction you will haue,
(though it be with the dearest blood chambered in my soule)
and at your command, these hands shall sluice it forth, by-
cause with such a death, my life will end wth toy, if some-
thing it may extenuate part of your discontent conceaued.
Any reuenge (most cruell knight, replied the sorrowfull La-
dy) will be but little, in recompence of the highe wronge I
haue receiued by those murthering handes, guiltie of my
proper blood. But for this time I will no other reuenge but
your departure from my company, leauing me sufficiently
assured of your cruelty to my cost: and I will liue (for my
misfortune will haue it so) with the only desire of a more
full reuenge. Wherefore from hencefoorth I straight doe
banish you my sight, for I will haue it so. If I shall depart
in your disgrace (most beauteous Lady) I will not haue my
life with your disfauour to torment me (replied the Prince)
but since you desire to be reuenged on him that only would
liue to admire you, take it with this sword caliser of your
woes, and my misfortune, and therewith strike of my sacri-
ficed head to appease your wrath, for I willingly offer it on
your pities altar, with all I else possesse already subiect to
your will, and only this doe praye that after you haue done
it, you would rent forth my harte (for none shall witnesse
your crueltie but your selfe) and there shall you see your selfe
engrauen, though not so naturally, yet with rarer perfecti-
ons: reasons sufficient to force me to elect you sole patronesse
thereof: The which remaining in your handes, (being
loues thrall) may moue clemencie towarde his Lord, to
sturre your anger to pitie your captiue, euen with his owne
reliques.

Wherewith prostrated on his knees before her, with his
eyes closed with water, holding the sword by the point, a-
gaine thus said. If only in my death (great Ladie) there

(des
ad in
ring
anc,
ule)
by
me
ed.
Las
e I
my
but
tly
my
oze
oe
art
ny
ce)
ld
ur
ri
on
to
ne
fe
is
Te
ng
to
e
is
re

ounters: But
meeting with
d, and with a
length on the
hon. Whereat
him so stagger,
at his gallant
ieued her to see
death, with his
bout his arme,
anner expected
omaine blade,
enemies shield
ter with a pece
onded another
ighting on his
ling stood the
a valiant war-
ck him on the
ians, he hadd
kept with his
so thrusting at
buckles of his
ere been slaine
little wounde,

a furious Ly-
on the little left
arting it from
the armour of
eaning all that
ath rested the
with his sword
e discharging
his head, he
ps, which see-
ing

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

ing, he followed the aduantage, & with a point had almost
ouerthrowne him. But our new Louer firmly staied him-
selfe, raysing aloft his Romain murdering sword, at such
time as the Ladie getting to her Horse cried out. Knights
withdrow your selues, for this is no combate, any farther to
proceede? But she came too late, for ere shee mounted, her
brother groaned his last falling on the earth with his head
parted in two, which sudden death grieved euen the very
soule of the vanguard victorious Dacian: But what the so-
rowfull Lady did, admits no comparisō: for casting her selfe
from her Horse, all the mouing motions of her breathing
senses left her so dispossest of Life, as they hadde the Prince
with this vnlook'd for accident. He vnlaed his helme, and
sitting on the blood-dewd grasse, he tooke the amazed La-
dies head betweene his hands, (which he durst doe because
the weapons of her excellencies through a pale ashie trance
had left her beautie without defensine armes) and began
to vse those meanes for her recouerie, that his braue heart
did neuer study, and with bitter exclaimes he saide. Oh
cruell fortune may it be, thou shouldst so soon temper with
so sower a chance, the first time thou wouldest a little fa-
uor me? Oh wise Nabato my professed friend, why didst
thou tell me thy care should alwaies be to cure my woes, if
all things now conspire against me to ouerthrowe my con-
tent? In his owne helme hee caused some water to bee
brought him, and sprinkled it vpon the Ladies faire face,
till with a sighe proceeding from her oppressed soule she
return'd vnto her selfe: yet for all this did she remember the
pitifull lamentes that the Knight hadde vttered, and
that the force of Loue did onely force him to: But seeing the
brother that she most affected, lye before her besmeared with
his owne blood, so cruelly slaine, she stepte from the Prince
saying. Let mee goe (rude and discourteous Knight) for
the wronges you haue gainst me committed, cannot be satis-
fied with lesse then the heart blood of your dearest life. And
casting her selfe on the dead carcase with such pitifull com-
nation

The second Booke

rests any small comforte,
that I may imagine, receiue
hands, for Guerdon of my
had knowne what this de
concerne you, my selfe had
life with farr greater care,
hatefull to mee, if still you
wrath. knight (said she) mo
of Hircania, and the cruellest
I will not execute my reue
performed with the offender
it is life and the sweetest, t
handes, neither will I the
pect and sollicite the heaven
some other sorte. The afflic
bitter answere conceaued s
sobbes and sighes so besieged
his senses, falling at his L
new kind of torment to aff
eltie, she tooke him in her a
she laid his head on her lapp
felt, he would not so soone
this lamentable spectacle v
the tender Ladye to breake

Oh blind despightfull Fe
well hast thou manifested
pleaded for the greatest en
miserate his woes, and pit
who might certainly knowe
her rigorous changing cou
tenderneffe the whole pow
past hauing been the great
do mee, will I with ioy acc
from thee, for she that was
harmie to hurt her, and wit
life, that in the beginning h

the Mirrour of Knighthood.

cruell Goddess vnworthie of a better name,
all thy actions thou perfozmest the deedes of an
tyger. And being vnable to doe otherwise, she co-
me to bring her some water, wherewith the di-
uine obtained his losse senses, and with a sighe
to burst his weake harte, he saide.

Stars that gouern'd my natiuitie, and more vn-
lucky to see my woes to conquer death, that dares
where he is onely wished, with his crueltie to
oppressed with cares: Oh vnfortunate hap who
thought so long and tedious a nauigation should
conluckie a Port: Oh valiant friends, now must
absence with ayrie words take my latest leane,
I saye, he shall neuer see you more that onely
murderers sights. Oh valiant Princes of Grecia,
all newes will it be, when you shall heare of my
life alwaies and content, soly delighted yee?
I myselfe in the Ladies lappe, a little lifting vp
with so many sighes, and throbbling sobbs, that
moued a Lions fiercenes to relent, but to the ex-
tent was this Ladies furie come, that it would
impression of any mercy, vnlesse it should alto-
gether pittie, which she thought was yet too soone
d. Since no pietie, noe pittie, nor no mercie,
the vertues which glorifies all your sere) maye
compassion in your obdurate bzeast, then at once
end the tormenting of my pooze soule, with so-
king a despised life, and take what reuenge you
weeping hart subiect to your Inmanitie. Knight
the Lady) ill would it befeeme me, if by yeelding
it, and in that maner to worke your content,
me cruell against my selfe: I wil not take any
may rather redolue to my dishonour, then
t for this time, only I will haue you grant me

all yours (replied he) there is no cause why by

The second Booke

passion, that it would haue
eyes, she wailed her brother
and face, with a pearled she
her two clowdie founts, she
it be (deare brother) that the
pose their happie reuolution
the cruell fates to persecute
ble a chaunce kept in store by
stacie, giuing the world so g
ly death? who shall dare ca
vnhappy end vnto our Ware
now must you take new w
reuenge, and build an alter
the cruell sacrifices of Nemo
further your reuenging thou
For you haue this day lost a
Ah tender youth so sudden
pittilesse inhumane death,
performe thy cruelties? ha
of innocencie, with such bar
hence my poore Lartyno, o
had placed all her hopes? A
rable Sisters, you had de
within the consistorie of you
you not (sterne goddesses) n
so to fall on me and end in m
with life to feele so many
teous Ladie poure forth her
But the enraged passions y
vnderstood y he had slaine h
then his owne soule, had al
dagger to drawe his owne
if he had not feared eternall
yet esteemed he that a profit
hoped but what should be m
mated his doooping heart,

l.
but resolved
he had cho-
knoledging
nselfe more
pe of hounds
ows, yet to
herein dis-
his intent,
wher in she
bloodlesse
forgot all
aued, ma-
esse, inso-
ld out, hee
trie whe-
tine heart
made him
he threwh
about her
y contēt,
as befell
Nymphs,
unt of her
ne shape,
le) that he
tune then
because he

it bee bla-
newe mi-
ignomi-
ie to those
Natures
eathly will
anguish
woes, in
your

The second Booke of the third Part

promise you should seeke to winne my will, which so truely doth acknowledge your souerainetie.

Why then (said she) my first demaund is, you giue mee the order of Chivalry and as for my other request you shall after know it. I doe (sayd he) esteeme my happinesse farre greater now, then a little afoze I esteemed my selfe vnhappie, in that (deare Soueraign of my soule) you haue deygned to imployme me, and in affayres moze difficult farre, would I haue had you hazarded my life : but seeing this is your will, I am content to obaie, and bycause I perceauie you want armour, I do beseech you to accept these, which were giuen me for good, and I shall be moze glad thereof bycause they shall obtaine a woorthier owner. I thanke you for your offer (replied she.) But these of Semyramis nothing inferior to those, I had not long since on yonder vallie giuen me, and that with them I should end the greatest aduenture of the world.

And so casting off her hunting garments, she discovered the rarest armes that the whole earth could afford, for they were all of Pearles and Dyamonds, with such arte vniued, that it made them farre stronger then if they were of fine tempered Steele : on one side they bare a painted harte, but made of inestimable orient Rubies, whose glister alyenated the beholders sight, and vntying a slender vnder garment, like to a paire of Wases, she remained the best accomplished, and in armour the absolutest that could bee desired. In hys sight she seemed the haughtie Knight of the Sunne, when he withdrew him from his Country rusticke life. Hee gazed on her, with a pensiue admiration, and thought the longest time too short for his contemplation, altogether forgetting his promise past. Well did the Ladye perceauie his amazement, (for shee of no lesse rare excellencie did accompt him) wherewith, a new motion with her little experience learned at that time, ingendred a firme loue with moze glories to dignifie her eternitie, but dissembling her inward passions, she put him out of his dumps with these words.

The

d.

late, for you
suddenly a-
d, your will
in this the
so lacing on
whose riches
er one Mo-
eatell parte
n the shoul-
old a trem-
hard. And
you let the
beautie, so
guird, with
I will de-
e absolutest
helme with
pe his cap-
e were left
her to him

take your
I reuenge
ng Wolfe.
erous feare
solution, &
swade her
reater con-
n to accept
doe offer,
our hands,
eauty with
ht) replied
m my bro-
e you have
erwise you
shall

The se

your seruice. I
path that will
not (remoꝛcele
ten of that inh
with a sauage
own childꝛen?
dalize the gloꝛi
do it) offed the
boast of it, oꝛ
excell the bꝛigh
done the cruel
honoꝛ d Ladie
lified bꝛest, pi
ūph of your vi
oh let this thin
shall stellify y
new life in me
vnlesse your p
only keep, as a
else other wise
wil neuer by c
many teares,
wordes, that
distilling drop
was assured b
she had alread
her will, thes

Seeing my
such passe, tha
you of this co
of, the mighty
as a particule
should stay til
shall incurres
uen them by t
I should carri

The second Booke of the third Part

ice. Let it be so: for this way shall you treade the
will leade you to a satisfied reuenge. Oh suffer
excelesse Lady) that it be sayd of you, what is writt
at inhumane and hellish sorceresse Medea, whome
uage desire of reuenge, most cruelly murthured her
Dren? consider (oh wonder of admiratiō) it wil scan-
e glorie of your excellencies, & you shall, (yf you wil
ed the rarenesse of your beautie: for neuer any could
t, or woorthely be nominated beautifull though she
e brightnes of y brightest Sun, vnlesse she do aban-
trueltie of an hardned hart, the sole dishonoz of all
Ladies: in steed wherof admit the pitie of a mol-
st, pittie the splendor of your name, pittie the try-
our victorie, pittie the Trophy of your vertues, this,
s shine through your clouded clemēcy, whose beams
lilyf your chivalries, immortalize your fame, & infuze
in me, whose blod is alredy almost vtterly defused,
your pitie gather it againe, restoring it to him y wil
as a memoriall statue of this your eternal cōquest,
erwise the unhappie death of your haplesse brother,
er by other means be sufficiently reuenged. With so
eares, & sighes did the woefull Dacian vtter these
, that they woulde haue melted a flintie rocke, to
g dropps of water, much moze her obduracie, that
ured his true loue passions forced him to it, and as
alredy giuen him the principall commande ouer
, these his new speeches made her thus replie.

ing my starrs, (braue knight) haue brought mee to
e, that I must consent to what you will, I acquite
his combate, because I thinke the conquest there
mighty God of warre hath onely reseru'd to himselfe
ticular honour due to his deitie. Moreover yf wee
tay till my knights come, there is no doubt but you
urre some great daunger, for the losse you haue gi-
n by the timelesse end of my deare brother, or that
carrie them the newes, would be no lesse, then yf
they

of the Mirrou

they had seene the maner of
neither consent to the one, n
mined to depart in your com
vnto you) vntill by others t
wen. So ioyfull became th
words, that like a man ouer

I cannot (most excellent
me anew, moze then I am
destinies (though with so m
me to the place where I mi
I haue no power ouer my
you shal command as the se
tion, hauing to your behest
as a true seruito: And as
y lowly earth, I beg I may
graunt with like humilitie
to giue me your victorious
pay what all the world sho
not (sir knight) you shoul
distresse: but because you
my pitie, I wil accomplish
to fulfill the first commande
an enemy to my content.
terfayned him as her knight
handes, which made the g
no other happinesse to bee
seeing himselfe so fauored
Make me at once diuinely
hart) with the discouery of
ueraigne stocke, and the k
cent. The same (answere
quire of you (sir knight) b
with asking, that you adm
Which seeing it is so, I an
you, but first let vs from h
an elder brother of myne,

The s

shall force me t
out them. Wit
sist from her p
he buckled on h
and not offend
meale ioynt by
did see him rea
to her pray, she
thing that so re
blowe vppon h
per it was imp
was forced to r
high state mer
with suche asto
made the blood
life did hee feel
greatly to toyn
with the bzaue
he receaue any
angry Garrofile
ched, as this L
taking him som
left foot forewa
that he was for
aloft, shee stru
shield, that she
enemie would r
inraged fury ag
more aptly they
Lord, sent with
to his dominati
together they co
of her free libert
row dutie she ou
offend the knig
Notwithstanding

the second Booke of the third Part

me to some felonious outrage, killing you with:
 With Millions of teares did he beseech her to de-
 her purpose, but seeing nothing woulde preuaile
 on his helme, swearing onely to defend himselfe
 offend her, for rather he would suffer himselfe prece-
 nt by ioynt to be torne asunder. So soone as she
 ready, more swifter then a hungry Eagle bent
 ay, she flang agaynst the yeilding youth, and flozi-
 t so renowned sword, she discharged so furious a
 pon his helme, that though through his fine tem-
 s impenitrable, yet it fell so heaue, that his head
 ed to receaue it with that humble dutie, which her
 e merited, bending both his knees on the earth,
 e astonishment, that shee seconded another that
 blood guih through his Visor. Peneer in all his
 ee feele the valour of one knight hand to hand so
 toment him: For neither in the cruell battell
 bzaue Tessereo brother to the King of Cerdena, did
 e any such blowe: no: yet about the libertie of the
 rrofilea Ducene of Tynacria, was he so ouermate
 his Ladie nowe did tyze him. For at his rizing,
 m somewhat amazed, shee stept to him with her
 yeward, with twoo thrustes one after another,
 as forced backwardes, and flourishing her sworde
 e stricke him so fierce a blowe on the side of his
 at she had almost feld him. The Lady, seing her
 ould not offend her, burned in kindled coales of
 ry agaynst her loue cōquered aduersarie: though
 y they might be called messengers of the winged
 t with so great hast to demande the Tribute due
 uration, that at such time they ariued, when al-
 hey could subingate her will, and dispossesse her
 libertie, that now her Combate was more tho-
 she ought her dead brother, then for any desire to
 knight, that so truely seemed to be hers.
 standing, she had so wearied him, that a Thou-
 sand

1887
 of the of my
 sand times he dis a true
 rather to die theue you
 sen to command of my
 her, vsing his dath you.
 nimble, then a that Las
 leaping on al sidn in be-
 his no small disous gal-
 pleased her. The I am
 which was but I things
 burned for him if Calli-
 carcass of her me, & be-
 conceaued affect them so
 king her redoubd also to
 much that now it be of-
 thought it better sume to
 ther by that meane cruel-
 to some cōmisera the age
 set his hands on denyed
 his shield a toe-krō him,
 sholders his amo I desi-
 (that he witht Iridiana,
 unto y son of Verse king-
 Salmacis, when lagon of
 name whose tramot but
 was the beginniuit) still
 might searelesse here be-
 made doubtful, a
 would not hurt h Forrest,
 Cūe not occas them in
 yoned through the, on the
 racle of your deu crying,
 nious blot of banwards:
 perfections that tgaue me
 rarest coulozs halnyramis
 aduance your conuercome
 and paynes, by h one

The second Booke of the third Part

should run into some imminent perill, for hee is reputed lesse valiant then any of the Greeke Princes, & by this I will discourses my birth and parentage: first intreating you to direct our course to Grecia, for I greatly desire to knowe those Princes so highly famozed throughth spacious continents, as also because I would bee resolved whether they be your kinsfolkes, for I much suspect

And in great hast beginning to mount a horse backe with farre swifter speed, out of the Forrest, there issued a Lady that was wont to come to the Prince Don Aluise. Straight did the Dacian Lord know her, to whom she with cherefull countenance he thus said: How now deare Aluise, tell me, haue you any neede of my person? Speake: I know my debt, therefore, I shall hazard nothing, if for your sake, I indaunger my selfe. Your loues Sir Knight hath much disquieted me, as not long since I was for you in Torismundo: But because I haue taken part in your griefes, there is no reason but you should let me enioy of the glorie and content you haue obtained by the able bountie of this excellent Lady, whose beautie fauour telleth her, for whose sake Troy was subuerted. And because your departure cannot be excused, my Uncle Aluise sends you this shield, that you may present it to the Lady, that in such great danger did put your valour in her new armes, that shee may altogether conquer. This said, she drew forth a shield of the like colour and armour, with so many precious stones, that it well might be the workmanship of so rare a workman, it had the like fauour that Don Elenos had, which was a Cupid with two faces: for in that he greatly delighted, saying: that in peace and warre, it was iust to acknowledge him, and tribute that ouer all things he claimes. And to you (brother) he bid me saye, you should not a little accompt this Knight: for it were like to manie to see him as you doe: and of your brother, he wills you to loose your sword, leaving it onely to him, for he hath it, and will here

Of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

regard al your affairs as his own. She awaited no answer, but with the turning of her Palfrey, she made the Forrest make so great a noyse, as if it had ben overwelmed. They looking what it might be, saw at the foote of a tree a rich tombe, admirable for curious works, and so transparant, that the Princes running to it, they saw the Ladies brother, as he fell with the cruell wound, with certaine redd letters, which the Prince thus read :

Here shall the wounded Larfino abide, untill his cruell murderer shall make satisfaction with his proper life, satisfying those two that dearest in the world did loue.

They could not conceaue the meaning of those wordes, though y^e vnderstanding he remained inchaunted, somewhat comforted them, and seeing it waxed late, the Lady said : Let vs go (Sir Knight,) for I beleeeue I shall one day see what I haue thought impossible : for as I thinke, my brother remaineth in this inchauntment. So they began to take their way toward the Sea coast. When the valiant Astorildo the Ladies eldest brother, seeing thee was not to be found, and finding his brother inchaunted, caused all his knights to retorne home, commaunding them to tell his Father, he was gon to seeke his sister, and taking with him but one Squire, he shipt himselte towards Græcia, in which voyage we leaue him, returning to the aduentures that happened the new Louers.

CHAP. II.

The dangerous aduentures that the Princes met, navigating towards Liguria, and the maruailous end thereof.



With incredible ioy, more then well may be expressed, & thankfully accepting the happy Fortune that y^e pleased heauens powred into their lapps, at length they ariued to the inchaunted back, at such time, as y^e glory of bright Tytans rayes would hide their

ke of the third Part

the world, and in whome with
the constancie, although it should
by them she gaue me the sword,
order of knighthood at the hands
, and that I should make peace
ono? should install me: for that
s (Sir Knight) is the answer
I seeing I haue with such li
ied, be not you too nyce to let
er of my brother is.

plied the Dacian) my soule re
st, because you may know I
o procure onely firmly euer to
not to you manifest the obscu
Notwithstanding, know my
, Nephew to the Emperour of
of his sole brother. And be

befell me in the course of my
d come to this you haue saide:
I Rome, hauing my hart as free
, my deare friend, commanded
hout speaking to any woman
ueraigne commaund ouer me,
nemie that in the whole earth
consisted the only quiet of my
the wiseman hath not erred, be
accomplished to the full: For
art, and the content I ioyed
my former successes through
of your first approach, so alie
at I was faine to submit my
so great a change, and yet
e of remedie through the vn
other, though now I haue not
because that learned man that
ertaken the care of his safetie.

But

of the

But because I am
sters of life and de
ing sacrifices. I be
loue, you will assu
an end to my pain

With the end o
his feare required
oyed his own, wi
stopt the passage o
his alteration, w
would not (Prin
honours puritie,
should be occasion
due to the confid
you neglect the du
selfe into these d
chast thoughts sh
you for my knight
sufficiently so cor
& thus alone to tr
ned imagination
discourtesie. And
with Millions of
her by the arme

That I haue
torments me, the
tent conceaued,
for my many tra
my dearest, dea
the motion of a p
thoughts. So a
of, that she thus

Since my hap
your hands, the
must forget and
shall passe these

the Mirrour of Knighthood.

I am and will be yours, vntill the fatall Si-
nd death shall abridge my soule of her breath:
I beseech you by the firmenesse of our sincere
all assure my hopes, confirme my desires, and set
p painfull longings.

the end of which wordes with moze boldnesse the
quired, he kist her on the cheek, which done, he
n, with such a bashfull tincture, y^t it altogether
stage of his speech. Well did the Lady perceau
on, who with some sholwe of anger replied. I
(Prince of Dacia) that the committing of my
ritie, and my Maydens fame into your hands,
caasion of your little regard vnto the great respect
confidence I haue in you reposed: wherein yf
the dutie you owe thereto, I will rather cast my
hese deuouring waters, then the glozie of my
hts shall endure any stayne. And the receauing
Knight hath not been so smal a fauor, but might
so content you: that my keeping you company,
e to trust you, with my immaculate, & vnstay-
nations, should be no cause to moue you to this
e. And offering to goe frō the hatches, y^e Prince
ons of sighes proceeding from his soule, stayed
arme with these wordes.

haue displeased you (Imperious Princesse) so
ne, that I know not how to satisfie your discon-
ued, vnlesse you now will take a full reuenge,
my trangressions, though it bee with effusion of
dearest lyfe: and yet what I did was forced by
of a pure sincere loue, and not of any lasciuious
So assured was the beauteous Rosamond ther-
thus made answere.

my happie starrs (braue Prince) haue put me in
s, they haue dyuen me to that necessitie, that I
t and forgiue any offence whatsoeuer: but if you
these lymits, my selfe will execute on my owne

The second Booke of the third Part

their splendor in the waterie Ocean of Hesperia, leauing
 the earth vnto her nightly silence, that to his better content,
 the venturous Dacian might know of his Lady, what shee
 was, and in what reputation his peerlesse soule was esteem-
 ed. Arryuing at the shore, he straight leapt from his horse,
 holding the scyzop that his Lady might do the like: but not
 committing it, with a smile (alighting by the other side) shee
 said, you shall not thinke (Sir Knight) with so small a ser-
 vice to satisfie the great wrong you haue done me, and im-
 peaching him, they staid til Fabio had shipt their horses, the
 readiest man aliue, to see what good Fortune had happened
 to his Lord and maister, because he thought her beautie ex-
 ceeded all compare, wherein he nothing did deceiue him-
 selfe. For in deede the world contained fewe like vnto her.
 Both which entered the Barke, that launched from the
 shores, with such bellocitie, as do the inhabitants of Maiori-
 sling a stone with their steeled sling, or with like vehem-
 encie that the lightning flasheth through the ayre, with
 such or more speede did the inchaunted Barke cut the salt
 waues of Neptunes bosome, hauing within it so great pro-
 portion, and diuersitie of cates, as if those Princes were ser-
 ued with the greatestt royaltie of Dacia. And after supper,
 hauing vnarmed themselues) they sat them on the bat-
 tles of their Barke, to take the coolenesse of a fresh ayre,
 that softly blew on their faces, as also to behold the clear-
 nesse of the pale resplending Moone, that then shewed the
 utmost pride of her waterie shine, that with more ioy they
 might enioy ech others beautie, waying in the ballance of
 true affection, the perfections of the same, resting so enuious
 one another, as amorous of eithers excellencies. For she
 thought that Knight was he to whome her beautie was
 due: and he that her merits deserued his true faith, till
 death, sacrificed with the fire of her valour. But to breake
 of eithers silent imaginations, he began: Now is the time
 (my Ladie) seing the Heauens and the Seas inuite vs
 with their calme quietnesse) that you would tell me whom

of the M

I must acknowledge
 soule, paying the al-
 liege man to his
 thinke (Sir Knight)
 small beauty, you do
 And because in all
 dies do commit gre-
 ing austere in deny-
 lants, I will satisfie
 called Rosamond,
 ioy in crossing me
 donia, which is the
 ing brought by tog-
 greatly affected an-
 keepe them compa-
 fered me, vntill our
 mount on horses, a-
 lest beastes that w-
 of xvi. yeares, were
 me that honour, su-
 because he heard n-
 red to passe vnto
 whose fame throu-
 domes, glorifies her
 beautie, and only
 grieue with my
 following the cha-
 fell me what I w-

We came, my
 (called of the faire
 pursute of that
 sudden a beauteous
 stay: for without
 and vnbinding a
 this armour, sayin-
 did winne Babyl-

The Mirrour of Knighthood.

Wledge, for the soueraigne Princesse
the awfull fealtie of my due tribute, a
his swozne Prince. I will not ha
(night) that with your great praising
you do pay me the much good that I w
in all things I will haue you know, t
ut greater sinne in being pittifull, the
n denyng the requestes of their amoz
satisfie your demaund. Know therefo
ond, (yet know I not why? since all
g me. I am daughter vnto the King o
is the countrey from whence we come
oy together with my brothers, seeing
ted and giuen to hunting, I determin
omp any, refusing no danger that migh
till our more yeares inabled vs, to pre
ses, and with Boare speares follow th
hat we met. My brothers attaining to
s, were by my Father knighted, who
our, supposing I would absent my selfe f
eard me diuers times say, how greatly
vnto Gracia to visite the Empreffe Cla
through all the world, especially in the
ifies her with the name of a sole War
only Myrrour of chualrie. I could
my Fathers denyall (yet I dissembled
e chase, vntill this day two moneths, t
t I will now tell you.

e, my brothers and I a hunting to this
e faire fountaine,) and parting from
at Hart, on the toppe of a mountaine
auteous Lady set her selfe befoze me,
thout armour, you cannot well passe fo
ing a little packet shee there had, shee
r, saying they were them wherewith Se
Babylon, and that with them I should ou

the third Part

With incredible ioy &
the fauor, & being war-
ne, that it was time to
ed to their seuerall cab-
es chamber: where they
le thoughts, that hadd
at that season, it is doubt-
red the glory attending

mozne began to lace the
the Princely youth, see-
y God of loue, & so dere-
the bed and leaning on
d, and making it sound
the felicitie that the hea-
o rare a Lady: in these

e of my state,
dy fall:
ted were of late,
nest good of all:
with his art,
with her better part.

alloperish,
with no more:
p fauors flourish,
ie the heauens adore.
pass d myne,
much decayne.

h loue, with how greate
God adored: seing thou
hy churlishnesse, and on
tollerable waight of thy
incesse heare him, ouer-
ioyed

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

ioyed to be loued by so brave a Prince, imagening to
not hope for more, hauing so great a good there present
withstanding, he determined yet to dissemble her affec-
vntill the time did counsell her what she should doe:
cause the Sunne had begun his rising in the East, &
her ready, putting on her white & most rich armour,
directly to the Princes cabbyn, who with his new ca-
it not, to clothe himself, yet seing his Lady come, he
rise, but she staying him sayd, I would haue had you
it afore (Sir Knight) for he that liues so carelesse, shoulde
belike doubt of his Mistres fauors, and with my
would be glad to know her, that I might aske her if she
in so carelesse a louer. Deuineest Princesse, (replyed
full Prince) with nothing doe I more expresse my
soules pensiuenesse, then with such carelesnes, which
well noted, it will be iudged a carefull confidence, for
not be more seene, nor better deserued in any, then in
true loue hath rooted his conceits, for without care
thing else, he doth onely busie himselfe, in the sweete
nations of his owne alienation.

Notwithstanding (answered the Lady) I doe con-
so great confidence almost grounded vpon an extreme
in most respects, little respecting the Lady loued, for the
fidelous louer did neuer, but die, confounded in his op-
pects. A care magnanimous and honorable, is to be
ed, excused, and worthy of estimation, but vtterly
ouerwhelmed in pensiuue suspence, and make you see
thing but a louer, befits you not, nor yet becoms it you
to accomplish so many things as you.

I doe ioy so much (deare Mistres of my hart) to be
wholy to employ my selfe therein, that I would shew
signe that I can any thing otherwise, and although I
doe so, I do not requite the worth of my employment
had a thousand soules, al were to few, compared to
of my imaginatiōs where al y good is decyphered,
wise I might expect, and I finde that being not this

1.

ing she could
present. Not
her affection,
doe : and be-
ast, she made
mour, & went
new care, had
e, he would be
had you done
se, should not
y my soule I
er if she ioyes
plied y ioye
le my poore
which being
ce, for it can-
en in whome
t care of anye
wete imagi-

oe condemne
tremittie, and
, for the ouer-
his owne ex-
is to be allow-
terly to bee o-
you see me no-
s it one boūd,

) to loue and
uld shewe no
ough I should
ment, for if I
d to y content
red, y other-
at this waye,
it

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

off rich armour of the great Romaine Brutus, and mounting on the hatches, where his Ladie did expect him, with a w amorous congie, he said to her. Happie is the Knight, that (imherited) hath obtained who with such care supplieth the faultes of my carelesnesse. It hath not been so little aide (shee) but it might need all: and looke yonder, for I thinke I see a Tower built vpon the Sea, vntilte her bygging doe decreaue me. Their barke quickly ioyned to it, that they well perceaued it was as the Lady sayd. So for as they aryled to the foot thereof, (for it was the same, where of fabell was inchaunted,) they saw certaine greene Emerald letters, to this effect.

No lesse cour- and valour then good Fortune require the entrāce of the marueilous Tower: for regarding what is in it, demanding this nothing is required. For first the vniustly loued of the two Sisters, shall loose his fortunute armour, ere so much as hope be got, to liberate from hence the treasure of Niquea.

Long did the two Louers stand guessing to vnderstand the ke inscriptiō, purposing to try the aduenture, when at the same that to them arriued another barke two Knights, of lesse disposition then any they euer sawe, attyzed wyth most rich habillements of warre, and no lesse admired their valiantnes, and hauing their visors open and shewing their fine faces, yet they coulde not imagine who so braue Knights should be. They that aryled after a solitary course sayd, sir Knights, we greatly desire to know, what aduenture this is, and the maner how we might proue it. It is little since we aryled, (replyed the loued Dacian) that I cannot certifie you of any thinge. For if we had knowen how to haue entred it, we had not stayed for you. Somewhat

The second

yt would be more th
she) you doe so highl
wish I were she, to c
enjoy, though in bea
longer then I might
publish. Thereof (e
better testimonie, th
sight. When (answ
loue, is more to feare
that the first sight les
your paine proceede
(braue Ladie, answe
seing none could nee
he that doth not fear
lousies, is to make t
med, because ielousi
ueth, & with that he
unto she answered,
querour (Heroyke H
true sayth, making
ding thereunto she r
uors, and for the fir
ployed on any that l

If (deare Lady o
thereof, who like me
should force strength
or who would feare
rance of so sweete a c
braue Prince (sayd
onely admitting no r
ceauue no wronge, to l
deserueth. But mak
ged shippe make to w
goe knowe who it is
iant youth out of his
mise, and with his

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

most rich armour of the great Romaine Brutus, and mounting on the hatches, where his Ladie did expect him, with a new amorous congie, he said to her. Happie is the Knight, that (imherited) hath obtained who with such care supplieth the faultes of my carelesnesse. It hath not been so little aide thee) but it might need all: and looke yonder, for I thinke I see a Tower built vpon the Sea, vnlesse her byggesse doe deceaue me. Their barke quickly ioyned to it, that they well perceaued it was as the Lady sayd. So soone as they aryued to the foot thereof, (for it was the same, where of abell was inchaunted,) they saw certaine greene Emerald letters, to this effect.

No lesse courage and valour then good Fortune requireth the entrāce of the marueilous Tower: for regarding what is in it, demanding this nothing is required. For first the vniustly loued of the two Sisters, shall loose his fortunute armour, ere so much as hope be got, to liberate from hence the treasure of Niquea.

Long did the two Louers stand guessing to vnderstand the marke inscriptiō, purposing to try the aduenture, even at the same time that to them aryued in another barke two Knights, of no lesse disposition then any they euer sawe, attyred wyth most rich abillements of warre, who no lesse admired their gallantnes, and hauing their visors open and shewing their beuine faces, yet they coulde not imagine who so braue knights should be. They that aryued after a solemne courtesie sayd, sir Knights, we greatly desire to know, what aduenture this is, and the maner how we might proue it. It is so little since we aryued, (replyed the loued Dacian) that we cannot certifie you of any thinge. For if we had knowen how to haue entred it, we had not stayed for you. Somewhat

The second Booke of the third Part

What abashed were the newe commers, and he that read the Inscription, thus spake. Unlesse I be deceaued I might considering the conditions demanded, although you had found meanes to proue it, it would be too difficult for you. Promising so much as it doth (answered the Dacian) though more troublesome, we had tried it: for without a thing proued, it cannot be called difficult. But you that such confidence doe repose in your valour, tell me in how many dangers haue you hazarded your person, for a man that feares is an euident signe, he hath been in some action, which should seeme to haue been difficult, although heere a promised hope doth lessen any feare, and therefore doe desire I and you might trie our fortunes in this attempt.

That were (answered the knight) for you to expect receaue helpe and ayde from my arme, if you needed. The Dacian was not of such patience, & therefore his rashness was condemned) as to suffer so broad a taunt, and so answered. Truly (knight) I neuer thought that the offering of my person should haue moued you to such presumption. I will prepare your selfe, for I will shew you I haue no need of your helpe. Wherewith he closed his Beuer, and drew forth his sword, finding his aduersarie in no lesse valour, being no lesse then the gallant Don Argante of France, and his companion was the valiant Torisano, hauing set from the defended Island, were driuen thither by the tempestuous waues, and with his armour and valour did imagine quickly to terminate that busines. But hee with him that admits no comparison but with the Great Hercules, who with the murthering sword of Brutus, which hee florish in his first assault, kept it aloft till hee spied occasion which offered (no knight like he could neuer with more opportunity in time better take it) he crost his good sword, and so hee himselfe for the blow, vnderneath his shield he layd it fiercely, that hee forst his aduersary to stagger three or foure steps backward. He had scarce executed this blowe, with an Eagles swiftnes, he leapt into his boate, and

nighthood.

ance so strongly, that
e had quite ouerthrow

oyces to solemnize the
ith the opening of cer-
Tower, the Heauens
etting their Celestiall
s y there were inchan-
er Couzens, settled the
this libertie hadd they
y were not suffred to
se, they might cōceale
ir louers company, for
at inchantment. Ros-
d to see his aduersarye
thought, hee might so
s, as also with seeing
ir fight, he turned vp-
ian blade, discharged
made him bende hys
rance. Rymble was
r, but the Dacian frus-
thrust, he forced him
came. And so at lēgth
e, they began the bra-
on those Seas: for vn-
the force of their fight
es, which was their
nt Rosamond grieue
, not for the daunger
age he had ouer his
waigh the present ill-
ance to the hope of a-
any him in al things
d that the world con-
ith these words.

It

The second Booke of the third Part

should be more then troublesome. Sir Knight (replying) you doe so highly accompt the thing loued, that I wish you were she, to obtaine that glorie that neuer Venuenioy, though she be a beautie a Goddesse, and it should be for longer then I may knowe, whether it be true all that publish. Thereof (the Gent Princeesse replied he,) crave better testimonie, then I can giue that I concealed with sight. When (answered she,) you cannot denie mee, that loue, is more to feare, then any other thing, seeing you that the first sight left you so wounded. Whereby I inferre your paine proceeded of your sight. All this (you haue said) (braue Ladie, answered he) is armour to defend my cause, seeing none could neuer loue, vnlesse he liued with the feare he that doth not feare his losse with thousand sighes and lousies, is to make the world knowe, he is not trulie esteemed, because ielousie is the aboundance of the soule that ueth, & with that he feares to loose the obiect loued. Whereunto she answered, In all things will you remaine soldier querour (Heroyke Prince) and herein will I witnesse true fayth, making it knowne vnto your Lady, that adding thereunto she may rewarde you with fauours, or honours, and for the first there is no reason they should be employed on any that lesse loueth then you.

If (deare Lady of my life sayd hee) I might liue and thereof, who like me should triumph ouer Fortune should force strength out of a drooping heart to loose, or who would feare a tempestuous storme, hearing the rance of so sweete a calme? That, and what else you braue Prince (sayd she) is in your hand. Quietly to possionely admitting no new change, for as you doe, you shall ceauie no wronge, to be depriued of the fauours, that you deserueth. But make you ready, for I perceauie a wellged shippe make toward, and I will in the meane tyme goe knowe who it is, and to a nimble Deare leapt by a iant youth out of the water, extreame ioyed of his Ladies misse, and his squiers helpe hee armed him with

It
and o
more
ing a
be Cl
(foz v
prepa
sweet
his an
stow
die cl
from
armo
affect
her e
blow
them
cause
him f
tions
had it
red m
eyes
furio
stroke
his in
fultra
foz ita
arme,
felt th
backe
board
haue l
the in
was a
he fell

The second Booke of the third Part

It ill beseemes vs, to see our friends in such egar warre,
and our selues in peace. Neuer did the gallant youth see a
moze accomplished knight then the Lady did represent, be-
ing armed: for which in many places shee was reputed to
be Claridiano. Notwithstanding, accepting the combate,
(for with loue he would not haue refused it) he began to
prepare himselfe. Casely did the Dacian Prince, heare the
sweete name of friend: which augmented such courage in
his amorous brest, that he began with fresh strength to be-
stow such, him selfe receiuing mightie blowes, that the La-
die clearely saw his aduantage. But quickly were they put
from this, turning to gaze vpon the knight with the white
armour, on whome his excellent disposition, did drawe their
affection. This was our knightly Lady, that meeting with
her enimie together, they laide on each other so puissant
blowes, that with their hands they were faine to sustaine
themselues. Of greater strength was the Lady, for which
cause shee rose soonest, and with her good sword shee gaue
him such a blowe on the Helme, that shee made him see mil-
lions of starres: shee secouded it somewhat lower, which
had it bene in the same place, he could not but haue incur-
red mightie danger, yet made she the blood flye thzough his
eyes, and nostrils, which was but making the youth moze
furious, who going towards her, seemed to awaight her
stroke which shee with eagernesse to bestowe, regarded not
his intent. For in the discharge, he stept to his left side,
frustrating her blowe, at which time, hauing opportunitie:
for staking her without shield there, vnder her right
arme, he strucke with such strength, that the Lady greatly
felt the waight of her aduerse sword: for it made her giue
backe with such a stagger, that shee had almost fell ouer-
board. And the haughtie Torisiano seeing her amaze, would
haue leapt after her: but she returned with such speede, that
she incountred him in his leaping, and so thrust him, that it
was an admirable wonder, how he fell not in the Sea (yet
he fell with a soze fall in the middle of his Barke. Gladly
would

of th

would the Lady
thought it woul
little. So she star
rauenous Tyger
med of an hund
noyse. For the
tation, that her a
specially in her
With like imma
agreeing in one
stréngth of their
Echo of their so
firme land many
noyse. By y for
couering her wh
of hairie gold, re
blood that issued
mentable sozt had
fall with blood b
at the enemies fee
with moze care th
lings, turned abo
ment, and witho
that with a rigo
with a leape he re
danger shee was in
Don Eleno celebra
ting the doubtfull
the louers heare it
It is no time now
blood you haue w
the cause thereof,
hath againe assur
So ending her spe
lept into her aduer
uered them selues,

The second Booke of the

rite after so many paines. This thur
but with ioy exult, when I see anot
oured, and much moze, if he obtaine
wishes, which gladnesse, hath posse
n a pleasure, that I haue purposed to
ince, who now among Venus chiefeb
ned, and of them the happiest, becau
nd. And in so much that for the leas
ours, Apollo willingly would haue ch
ie for his decaying mortalitie. With
rily discourse, and amongst other cha
she felt her selfe of the last combate,
arie? How could I but do well (r
er (bzaue Prince) hauing on my sid
ian Lord. That were (deare Lady, I
s done in company of your Fortitude
the courage for greater aduentures:
wered she) purpose to beleue it so, ti
ing) you loose what your valour got.
Fortitude to maintaine it, then to re
oule I would reioyce to knowe wha
in the Tower do remaine. For in r
tie so greatly esteemed through the w
noured elsewhere, is but the shadow
left inclosed there. And neuer bele
tie will dearely cost, to him shall c
rophie of their gained honour, will
test toyle. And no little pleasure shou
the knowledge of those knights, w
e of high descent, considering with w
he combate. Who is he that dares l
d he) the Princeesse of Callidonia bei
ill feare to displease her, seeing they
use they will not do it) also tremble a
it be so (replied shee) the Prince o
my armes. If my Fortune (aunsw

the third Part

s thus considered, I can
another by his mistresse
taine the glorious end of
possest mee with so sud-
ed to follow the Dacian
hiefest fauourits may be
because beloued of Rosa.
least hope of her deare
haue changed his eternal
With her did Don Eleno
her chat, demaunded her
bate, with her strong ad-
well (replied she) and be
my side the valour of the
ady, said she) because it
tude, whence redoun-
tures? I wil not so soone
it so, till once againe (for
r got. For it argues no
to regaine it. And in
what those Ladies be,
in my indgement, the
the world, and so rare
adow of that substance
r beleue mee, but their
shall concerne, because
will counteruaile the
re should I also conceaue
ts, who surely cannot
with what courtesie they
dares longer maintaine
ia being his enimie, if
g they that liue in peace,
mble at her name.

ince of Dacia neede not
answered the Prince)
had

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

had giuen me that good that yet she hath not, I need
then expect greater hopes? and therefore shee doth
this happinesse, that he may still be crauing, that
with such feare. All that shal little auaille you (repl
Ladie) to defend you fro... mine anger, if once you f
it. Ay me (saide the amorous youth with a sigh, a
snare to intrap the captiue Ladie) how well can m
auerre it, since that little instant that my life was p
ged to hope a perpetuall eternitie. I would not Sir U
(saide she) you should so soone assure your selfe to liue
faueur, were it onely, because you are so reputed by t
dies of the inchaunted Tower, and so I will dissem
former anger.

Thus went the loued youth, enioying of these fa
when one morning when Aurora first shewed the brig
of her face, armed with their riche armes, they ent
broad cleare riuer Achelous that deriues his name
Tethis famous sonne, that combated with Hercules a
marriage of Deianira daughter to Onco King of Etol
till the warrelike Theban, by dispossessing him of hi
gaue that riuer his name, which he christened wi
blood. Within sight had they the mountaine P
whence it springs. And had they knowne what the
fell vnto their ancestors, there is no doubt but with
delight they had gazd on it, & with more pleasure por
ted his hight, But w the stream, thzough the current
riuer, they were dziusu with such velocitie, that w
three daies they entred the Italian seas, & in the fourth
sing along the Tuscan land, cutting twixt Vero, and M
two mighty riuers proud of their Arreis, & when the
mounted on the highest promontory toppes, they
aland in Monaco, the haue port of Liguria now called I
not farre from the populous Cittie Sauona, wher th
courte laie.

With great content landed the two valiant louers,
the only companie of Fabio, and leauing the charge of

The second Booke of the

ted by their foes. Betweene them, searely
the Lady cast her selfe, & in her entrance
Don Argante, vpon his shoulder shee groue
her furious rage, whose paine was so
thought that side was opened to his mid
Torisiano with a thrust, she made his shi
best, and himselfe almost loose his breat

But this time was the enraged Dacian
florishing his rich sword, whereby they
great perrill: had not the most beauteous
quea foresen it, who much pittying the
thus spake.

So admirable is the losse that this sp
receiue, with any of your deathes (val
ous knights) that it constraynes me to e
you there be so much courtesie as courage
giue ouer this combate, for which these
worthely extoll your bounties. The P
enuious of so rich a sight, quickly thus re
red Lady, yt doth so aduance the honoz of
that none can be more greater, then to c
ded seruice of all Ladies, insomuch that
deuine felicitie, to haue such occasions to
fore I say, that for the incredidle desire,
I haue to serue them, I doe on my beh
fight, not onely for this tyme but for euer,
doth leaue so waied (to my cost) by this
best to craue an assurance against all futu
the Princes greatly smyled at her speech,
her to bee a woman by her hayre, when
whereupon Lyriano replied. Wrauely by
your beauty (most valerous Ladye) by
knights to your perpetuall seruice. An
were them, that you might know, if we
because we onely induozed to be your
Notwithstanding we hope, and so I doe b

the third Part

fearelesse of her head, did
ance meeting first with
e grounded the waight of
as so extreame, that he
s middle, and reaching
is shield ioyne with his
breath.

Dacian entred the barke
they could not but incur
uteous Princesse of Ny-
g the two companions,

his spacious Dybe will
(valiant and couragi-
e to entreate you (yf in
urage) so: this time to
hese Ladies and I will
he Princesse Rosamond
us replied: first admy-
no: of wādzing knights,
n to obey the comman-
that they accompt it a
ns to shew it. Where-
fire, & inexplorable wil-
y behalfe giue ouer the
euer, because y Knight
this, that I thinke it
all future accidents. All
ach, because they knew
hen shee lost her helme,
uely haue you defended
e) bynding thereby all
. And wee wish wee
if we can intreate, it is
your dutyfull seruitors.
doe beloue, there is no
Knight

of the Mirrou

18871
Knight but will do it, soly t
faueur, though our intreat
lesse courtesie then valour
so the Phenician replied w
most sure (deuine Ladies)
part of your fauours: much
by this, what by the other
companion and I, are cont
trophie of the conquest to th
is the victorie (Heroike wa
not onely of this battaile, b
Hereupon they imbaced on
their last attempt, and so th
chaunted Barke: which no
swifter then an arrowe shot
ted from the inchaunted Le
amazed, that they could not
they entred the Persian Sea,
Lyguria: what there befell th
be related.

CHAI

How the two Princes D
at Lyguria, and what



S many, and
ences that ha
great his cro
tures, that if
he obtaines o
say, it happen
may it be accompted a mirac
tie then the Phœnix, whose na
ralitie, which being so, with
at anothers happinesse there

The second Booke of the third Part

Barke to him that guided it, they tooke the broadest troden path they could finde, because they woulde the sooner meete with whom might tell them the land they iourned in. They trauailed with their armour for that they tooke most felicitie therein. In this manner went they in sweet chatt, (for none is like to that of two, if they intirely loue) til it was towards noone: at which time they spied a damsell come towards them as fast as her palfrey could runne, crying aloud after she saw them. *Way me*. (*Sir Knights*) now is the time, that you must make knowne the valour of your parsons, by redressing the greatest disgrace that might befall. And if you be determined to returne with me, by the way I will tell it you. We are content faire damozell (replied the Prince) to accomplish what you will, haning for such purposes, receiued the order of Knighthood. So shee turned her palfray, they all set forwardes in great haste, while the damozel thus said: you now (*Sir Knights*) are within the kingdome of Lyguria, nigh the citie of Sauona, where the king keepeth his Court. And because this countrey is so fresh, temperate and pleasant, the Princesse Orsyna walked abroad this morning vnto this Wood to recreate her selfe with other Ladyes, not farre from the temple of Hercules: and sitting all together about a pleasant fountaine, from one side of a groue there issued a most sauage monster, like vnto a bigge horse, and hurting none of vs, through a sudden trance that surprized vs, he had time to carrie away all the Ladies two by two, and amōg them the Princesse, except me and two other, that are gone to beare these heauie newes vnto the citie.

Consider (*Sir Knights*) my distresse, & whether I haue not reason to bewaile it. You haue it (faire Lady, answered Rosamond) and so great, that it had moued mee to such cōpassion (that setting aside the duetie that al Knights are bound to, in procuring her libertie,) I do here offer my person to raunsome her from bondage, promising to be foremost therein. Shee vttered it so quickly, that the Prince could

could not
hope that
time they
med no le
stones so
many Dy
senses w
teares she
boos h m
dies. In
leauing t
went to t
fast shut,

Forwa
led the P
rous ente
red, and
ioyced hi
For befo
any thing
cie assure
by onely
I am the
known
gallant
the gates
Theleus
Proserpi
She co
of fire, to

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

to not shewe his willingnesse in that case. Yet did he
that his Lady would commaund it him. Within short
they arrived at the Temple, which in their sights see-
d no lesse gorgeous then any they euer sawe. For the
es so shined, that they seemed of burnisht golde: and so
ny Pyramides it had, that the view thereof ravished the
ses with pleasure. So soone as the damzell saw it, with
res she said: That (Sir Knights) is the place that har-
s him that stole the Princesse my Mistresse and her La-
s. In a tryce dismounted the two gallant louers, and
uing their horses to Fabio, with their naked swords they
nt to the Temple, which was with brazen barred gates
t shut, on whome they read this inscription.

*The entrance of the auncient Temple of Hercules, is gran-
ted but to one: First swearing, that he loveth, and with a
faith inviolate, for a honsf so amorous as this, may not be
allowed to any, but such a one.*

Forwards stept the Lady, with whome nothing preuaile
the Princes intreaties, to make her leaue that dange-
is enterprize, but swearing what the entrance requir-
d, and that so loud, that the Prince might heare, it so re-
ced him, that his senses with pleasure were bereft him:
2 before shee knockt, she said: If my being in loue, may
y thing availe, then will I not loose what my constan-
assures. For I vow by my high thoughts, that I live
onely being so, envying none therein, because I beleue
in the best bestowed of any that euer loued, since it was
owen what loue did meane. And so with a seld seene
lantnesse (able to intrap the God of Loue) shee rapt at
gates, which were opened with no lesse noise, then whē
eleus was entertained in hell, bent to the rape of faire
serpine.

She could perceiue nothing about the gates but flames
re, to defend them, whose timerous sight, was suffici-
ent

third Part

me not fau his dei P nar mo fau dei mer holi uer bett Dac was dett (an nott lesse my f that beau ly he mee liber the t grea with but t left t it (sa he w (beca If soare

ded him on the leggs,
nder. Admiration
foz the nimblenesse
ond cannot be ima-
as it had her selfe:
his blood so fast to
ing her so strongly,
t not so much, but
, which then thee
ich, ayning at the
p to the hylts, that
g himsele so wound-
ake, and with it,
ngth, that her flesh
gering her, that it
long. But consi-
ure, and how shee
animated her selfe
end that perrilous
ophie of her valour.
ld receiue a blowe
h the point against
he discharged it as
ng it, kept vnder
thrusting it to the
yet not his closing
hing her with the
wn on the ground,
with clowdes and
ndering, as if then
ome: which past,
a most sumptu-
ndes like massiue
Lady, both pear-
able to draw pitie
Prince of Dacia,
is

of the Mirrour of Knighthood

in quest of his deare Lady: But seeing the
to it, whereon he read these words:

*The life of Rosamond dependeth on him
compassion will giue his, to redeeme hers
ther to dye himselfe, then that the world
loose her.*

Here would not Lirgandeo expresse the
downe the extremitie of discontent, that Do-
ceauue, supposing her dead, whome bearet the
tendered, his tongne ceast her mouing, his l-
gether, and all the motions of his bzeathin-
their powers, that to complaine him her w-
his eyes he Metamorphosed in his Lady as
manner did hee beweepe the greatest losse
gaue leaue to publish his sorrowe, beginni-
fighe bitterly to exclaime aloud, whose nois-
memorie of his woes, made him to burst to
Ah cruell Goddess of inconstant happines,
thou manifested the extremes of thy mutabil-
didst thou euer shewe the power of so mon-
that ere I could enioy so rich a good, myne
hold so disastrous an euill: but indeede it w-
to perfect to continue: Oh deceitfull dece-
hast thou taken the full possession of my har-
there is nothing in y world to be trusted,
naged by her hands, that neuer did assure
foz a greater losse. Oh diuine Princess, l-
whom thou leauest behinde, eternally to be-
lesse end: wherein did thy Eleno so offend t-
not follow thee in so sower a storme, which t-
pleasant then the passage through the star-
Oh you Sisters of Phaeton Mistres of sor-
stressed Nymphes that dayly waile the pit-
bes stony change, come and vnite your woe

hood.

ing the Tombe, he wist

on him, that through
me hers, contenting ra-
be world should so soone

le the grieve, nor sette
at Don Eleno did con-
arer then his soule he
, his lippes cleast to-
athing senses so lost
her wanted strength,
dy as shelay. In this
offe untill his bzeath
ginning with a deepe
se noise refreshing the
st to these exclaimies:
nes, howe well hast
tabilities: on whom
monstrous tyrannie:
myne eyes should be:
e it was a happinesse
deceipt, howe soone
y hart assuring mee,
sted, specially if ma-
ssure any thinge but
sse, lyfe of that body
to bewayle thy time:
end thee that he maye
ich to him were more
starry firmament:
sorrow, and you di-
e pitious hap of Nio-
woes in one, & helpe
me

booke of the third Part

It hart . But shee that was borne
 esse it proceeded from a true loue)
 the fire . Where not a little did she
 bylonian armes , whose inestimable
 that heat . Neuerthelesse , that
 er Beuer , was so extreame , that it
 Yet valiantly suffering it , with
 forward , till shee came before an
 ed to sacrifice to Hercules , and lea-
 to a large yard , (free of the flames)
 tent shee conceiued , when there shee
 the same many Ladies lamentably
 ight , that shee supposed to be her
 oure was carried on a Hearse , pear-
 s) saying , O poore Prince , how
 s conspired the overthrowe of thy
 death : and turning to the Lady that
 with griefe , they saide : What a
 f Callidonia , to haue protested thou
 one thou shouldest loose thy louer?
 to demanda the cause and manner
 a corner of the yarde , there issued a
 igger then the greatest horse , who
 hen the Winde , made to wa:des the
 es :

h , and straight thou shalt knowe the
 ion , hauing undertaken this enter-
 n honorable act) that Ioues-borne
 foe durst neuer imagine . In his
 e , and so incountred her so mightily
 that with a grieuous fall he ouer-
 . Returne vpon her he desired , but
 him , so farre did lead him , that whē
 s alreadie on her feete . But here
 death . For the sauage monster
 mightie trees , which he threwe in
 Trees

of the Mirrour of Knight

freede of darts , whose force , were able
 threwe a well built edificie . The Lad
 open her visar , the better to see how id
 the vnequall fight , wherein shee did not
 the furious Centaure , taking one , with
 to a small darte he hurled it . Her nimble
 it , which lighting on a stone of the wall
 bp to the middle , overthrowing a great
 speedie was he in throwing , that tho
 selfe of the second : yet the thirde tooke
 her shield , that it turned her thre or fo
 that she was like to fall , and so in this a
 on the Helme with the last , that he laio
 voiding much blood through her mouth
 herein is shee not to be blamed : for the
 all the Grecian Princes vnyted , hadd n
 furie .

In midst was his last tree broken :
 ned , to vse the strength of his armes and
 longer then a spanne , wherewith he c
 Lady . And because he could not penetr
 (for that saued her life) hee tumbled
 with such force , that shee recovered her
 wonder , to see her selfe in her enemies cl
 not striue with him , till shee tooke him
 so staying till hee turned her on her rig
 her selfe with such strength , that shee
 And not omitting that occasion before
 she wounded him on the brest so might
 mous sword , that the blood like spou
 vaines , wherewith he stained the white

Hereat the Centaure beganne to roze
 noise was heard of y Prince that was l
 so tormented him with feare of his Lad
 without longer stay , he cast himselte
 flames , following the Eccho of the noise

Knighthood.

able to p'sturbie to ouer-
he Ladie was driven to
w to defend herselfe from
id nothing amisse. For
with such puissance like
nimbleneste saued her fro
e wall in y yard, it ranne
great peece thereof. So
at though shee freed her
tooke her on the syde of
e or foure times about,
this amaze he struck her
e laide her on the earth,
mouth and nostrils. And
or the whole strength of
add not withstode this

en: so was he constraine
s and nayles, that were
he embraced the tender
penetrate her sure armo^r,
bled her vp and downe
ed her selfe, in no small
ies clawes. She would
him at aduantage, and
right side, shee strained
shee scape his nayles.
ore shee stept from him,
rightly with her so fa-
spoutes burst from his
white paved yarde.

roze so fiercely, that the
was left without, which
Ladies daunger, that
elfe through those fierie
noise that stil increased:

me to
I shou
too lit
How
berest
How
nitie o
wilt o
(sacre
comm
world
ought
nute p
force i
occasio
his fir
thing
her ha
it direc
(not li
it to th
Bu
with
make
the Th
did ba
wherr
stroug
nowne
aduent
small l
that m
casking
him she
might
tempts

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

moztall glories, did accomplish them, that they might now see them comprehended, and for aye portrayed in this sole one by you atchieued. For there can be none more greater, nor more illustrious the to subiugate a proper wil, the which you haue so manifested, that in eternall I shall rest bound, remayning all in all sufficientiy satisfied of my brothers death, for if the, one you gaue me, you haue now restored it with a ioyfull life, which I accept onely to employ it in your content, paying thereby the comptless debt that I doe owe. Of your valour (soueraigne Princesse) would I haue all the world to witnes, that it might be known with what felicitie, you gloriously did terminate the most difficult. Oh blisfull death since thence redounded the possibilitie to enioy your glorious victorie: & happy pꝛoofe, that by shewing the firmenesse of my constant hart, hath giuen mee assurance of the most impossible? But oh most happie Prince, that hath been eye witnes of such acts. Now leaue this (replied y^e glad Lady) and againe embracing her deere louer sayd. Neyther my victorie nor your pꝛoofe can any wit augment the great loue that I afore did beare you or that she could wish, or you your selfe desire of her that did put her selfe in your hands. Deare Lady, (answered the beloued youth) yt shalbe as you please, but let vs goe frō hēce lest the company of this hellish beast annoy vs. It hath not so much hurt me as you thinke (sayd she) and what it hath done I forgiue, because it was the occasion that I saw your high valour. And so they began to vieue the deformitie of y^e monster, whose like was neuer thitherto seen: Lyrgandeo sayth he was begottē & bred in Thessalie, where more Centaures did inhabit the in any other place, his name was Monicho & was general ouer those in y^e cruel war against y^e Lapithes on y^e foot of the mountain Othrys y^e greatest in al Thessalie, whom the great Magician Nnranto Hercules speciall friend had their brought to garde his Temple, where hee performed many cruelties. and one of them was the imprisonment of the Princesse and her Ladies, who then appeared

for & th
that al
would
and de
gined, v
which
runne, o
that she
shee cou
though
monster
he was
ded, he
began t
and bor
was a
dering t
had left
with an
attempt
Where
vpon he
him, it
if he me
his arm
hiltes, v
her betw
pangs o
wherein
foggie n
the vtte
there ap
ous La
golde : v
sed thro
from a

of Knighthood.

lozed ayde of some immortall
ities, (perfect perfections of Ma-
honour shal with reading this
h your woorth, doe I praye
I cannot prosecute the praises
Infuse (sweete Ladyes) parte
open my dull senses, that from
power with a bolde reuyued spi-
e intricate and difficult, then I
ian Haze. Graunt it (O ye
thoughtes from their due obedi-
myle: yet vouchsafe it, & with
that trembling doeth await the
ecreeing sentence, and yet but
shall lacke, without ioy I must
Whetstone of your favours to
rude Witt, because it wanders
e. But deluding my pensue
effect obtayned prayers. The
h approached where they thus
readie begun, and stepping to
while braue knightes, soe it
glozies in that name, to assalt
age did possesse the true louer
the deuise of his cousen, auns
swift horse, and with an vn-
er of the worlds chivalrie, en-
at spacious field, with no lesse
Gallies had met. Good were
ur, yet Don Elenos admittes no
nces could not take hold, but
, where in the fourth Sphære
ngers from so valiant warriours
ir saddles, returned with their
had the best blade in the earth
2
(except

The second Booke of the third

red in sight comming from a chamber where
had put them: the which being before the King
so tedious to dylate the courteous ceremonies
the one in receauing them, and they in thanke
the timely ayde. Then arriued the King be
what did happen, who with incredible ioye
Knights, and his deare Daughter, (that one
chiefe beauties was) humbly requesting the
pose the a while in his Court, where they hono
ned as their merits had deserued. They woul
kindly excusing themselves, how they could
cause it greatly did auaille them to take to so
extreame necessitie of an aduenture that exp
sons in another place.

The Dacian told y King who he was, whi
ded him, which occasiō kindled in him a per
friend ship, which one day he made it known
in his Daughter the vnconsuming flames of
the Princesse Rosamond, supposing her a ma
sence shee suffered the most griened life w
passions that euer loue did abyde, vntill she
where the truth extinguisht the effect of her
recompence therof she receaued at Rosamond
bād meriting her beautie w whom she ac
selfe sufficiently satisfied for the paines she
Hereupon the King & his trayne departed
uing the Princes in the Temple gazing on
the Chappell, whose admiration did astonish

They saw al his labours that he suffered,
trayed, and the warres against the warlike
in the end thereof they saw the cruell sacrific
selfe on Oeta mount in Thessalie, with the bla
which Nessus with his venomde goze imbrui
anyra his wife sent him. It greatly delight
behold the haughty deades of so braue a m
deriued her pedigree from him. And at last

of Knighthood.

marke taking their course to
wise man remaineth doubtful
d seale the assurance of his
re witnesse to it, buyting to
s w especial care in y forming
his age did know. With this
nt on the eyght daye of their
the Gretian shores not farre
Drinces great Joy. Having
y began to travell through an
e end began the entrance in-
rce had they set their feete on
anyshed, whereby they vn-
done leaue Grecia. Their by-
eing knowen: and with their
set forward on their waie.
one, but they hard a noise like
d in their entrance into the
before them thre Knights
ke celeritie, but as his Tiro
known, and he thirsting
er he gallopt so fast, that he
behind, who like a furious
ouertake her louer. What
h a new Chapter.

III. *Don Eleno with the Greeke*
taile were combating with o-
ch is that controuersie begun
e second Booke of the second
Hillorie.

er course then doth Latonus
Antipodes, did the warlike
ugh the Greekish Forrestes,
oure after midday, that hee
and the most brauest battaile

that

The second Booke of the third Part

(except his Ladies) & against it no enchantment preuailed. Together they discharged y^e strength of their puissant armes vpon eithers head, making them bowe to the saddles pum- mels, with such reuerence, as befitte two such Princes. And so they began one of the brassest battailes in the world, with more noise and furie, then if it were between twentie knights. Mightie and invincible was Don Elenos power, but here he met his equall in the Prince of Grecia (that against Milo would maintaine the field) making him glowe like a kindled cole of fire. Yet for all that, did not he behaue himselfe best: for no blow did light on him, but mangled his flesh, bruised his bones, & rent his armour: whereof the lookers on were not a little amazed, knowing Rolier, seeing him so busie in the combate of one knight: and he being therewith vexed to the hart, tooke his sword twixt both his hands, & went to his enemy, giuing him so fierce a blowe on the side of his Helme, that it made him loose his feeling, falling on his horses necke, he doubled another somewhat higher, & such a one as his armour then gaue him his life. Neuerthelesse, the blood gush't out at his Beuer. Oh who would not now feare to see Don Eleno that recovering himselfe more furious then a sauage Lyon posselt with a raging feuer spurd against his Cousen, & with both his hands not missing his Helme, it little auailed him, for the sword and the strength that did guide it, snatcht away the toppe with his plume of feathers, & with Mars his puissance descending on his right shoulder, he layde him on his horse crupper, the which setting his knees on the earth, through the strength of the blowe stode still. The loued Dacian was no knight to omit so good occasion & chifely with such a horse: pricking him with the spurres, he made him runne against the Greeks. It is doubtfull & not yet determined, whether y^e Prince of Dacia got any honor by the deede: for w^{ch} so braue a horse, it was no maruell if he had overthrowen the Greeke & his, who in a tryce lept from him. But this custome had the Dacians Tyrio, that in fight he pardoned none on foote, &

188

of
so returned
he was for
ling. He pa
either let m
wilt haue n
lawes of a g
said the Dac
taine what
rayning him
troope of k
knew they
that not a li
knew him
(and with
the mortall

Some
yet was it
made him d
that wante
bling feare
lour and be
with such f
lesse then A
more furio
the knight
mirable.

And he
taking her
her Helme,
with a syde
the ground
both handes
full, it could
with the pa
sudden leap
other, which



The second Booke of the third Part

that euer, he either heard or sawe, of sower knights alone. Some of them he knew by the deuises of thir armour, and through the same that with them they had atchiued, and who best seemed was he in the purple armour that combated against a Knight that on the toppe of his hearme wore a branch of siluer. Of both he had heard wondrous. The third knight (that fought with another of strong timbered members, and in stature almost hygh as a gyant) had on Russet armour with stripes of blacke amell, and grauen with gould, on his sheeld his deuise was a branch halfe gould, and halfe siluer.

This knight he hard saie to equall the valiantest in the vniuersus. Of no lesse disposition did he Judge his aduersarie, that in his sight did greatly bere him. While he thus gazed on them, arriued the thre knights: and the best disposed of them approached where they were in combate as if he wuld haue it w the great knight. But first know these 3 knights were the valiant warriors, Rosicler, Meridian, and Oristides, that from the kingdom of Lacedemonia departed with great greefe for the losse of Rosabel, and no lesse grieved was the offspring of Priams destroyed rare for y gallant Sarmatia, for whose loue, he felt mortal paines, especially for his sword that he had giuen as a pledge therof. So soon as Rosicler arriued, & narrowlie viewing the great knight he perceaued him to haue on the rich armour of that famous Bramarante, that with his owne handes sacrificed his lifes blood, because he would giue none the glorie of his death. And seeing his armes that Brusaldoro had taken to poore Zoylos cost, as in the second part is mentioned: with the greatest furie of the world, he went against him, stepping betwixt him and the knight of the Branche, that was his brother Poliphebo of Tinacria (as in the last Chapter of the first part of this Vistorie was related) and defyed him to mortall battaile.

Thus farre haue I past treading without feare on the sharpe pykes of a bold presumption, but no further dare I proceede

proceede
helpe not
tures Dac
simple e di
that fa plye
of your ht co
of your e G
your p gra
rit, to vere
vntre ke
power ke
ence) G d
it I w se
vncert u so
for a li) by
go for wi
sharpe disc
in the fo
inmane
courage
conten'oz
them treu
doth his
any wme
The hi
of Olul La
swered lo
inmag fe
countre
ferroz, bia
the lano
comparha
in shine h
they witt
that w
swords

The second Booke

Courfers backe, and as he lay the
blow, that it almost draue him ouer
ned to himselfe with the last stroke
his saddle, and crushing one foot
gainst the Ladie, whose sight won
the God of Warre euen in his owne
ued no sparke thereof: perhaps
blow to conquer her enemy, altho
awaited it, which was such, (ah)
thee free youth, first to breake thy
For without conquest, thereby the
more, the verie hope of remedie:
uitie doth farther extend it selfe th
toppe of her helme backwardes, h
and with a little more she had don
of the blowe did giue her much ba
to her selfe, she spread her armour
low haire, than Apollo's in his mo
beautie of her face more glorious
of the heauen, yet hers shined w
cause adorned with the splendor
Astounded with a sudden admirati
ing so farre hers, that the mortall
death was not able to bereaue him
monne. Well did the Lady note it,
the remembrance of the knight she
Castle where she obtayned the fil
passe, though not without infinite
the gates of her all wondring brea
she closed with the Greeke, that wa
comptlesse accompt of such fauours,
thee pluckt it off, discovering a mo
anders, causer of the deadlie discor
and the destroyed Troians. There ha
dagger that in her handes she had, i
braced her with more strength the

ke of the third Part

y shee gaue him a dowe right
 m out of all feeling. He retour-
 stroke, and setting himselfe in
 tooth with another, he went a-
 t would haue feared the might
 s own speare: yet in her it mo-
 haps shee was sure, with that
 , although she receiued it. Shee
 , (ah who might here aduertise
 e thy sword then to execute it:
 by thou loosest thy libertie, and
 edie: for the Ladies chaste gra-
 lse then so) that lighting on the
 es, he tumbled it to the earth,
 d done the like, for the strength
 ch backwards. And returning
 nour with framels of more yel-
 his most pride, and shewed the
 zious than the spangled couert
 ned with more excellencie, be-
 dor of twoo goulden Sunnes.
 miration stood the Greeke, rest-
 ortall stroake of all conquering
 e him of the glorie that there he
 note it, at that instant recording
 ight she did see portrayed in the
 the silver branch, yet shee let it
 infinite rapping alterations, at
 g breast. But possessed with rage,
 hat was prepared to receiue ac-
 uours, & catching at his helme,
 g a more fairer face than Alex-
 discordes between the Greekes
 here had shee kild him with the
 e had, if the Prince had not em-
 gth then doth the Iuie incom-
 passe

18871

of the Mirrour of Knighthood

passe the straight towering Cline, and sta-
 said. Soft (soueraigne Ladie) doe not at-
 many extreames: hauing sely with that of
 deuine beautie, carried away the palme of
 victorie from the battaile of an euer conquer-
 as a trophie of so memorabile a conquest: I pray
 sword, as the spoyle of my subiection: let
 is no true Nobilitie to require more of a val-
 that willingly submitteth to your command
 not onely I, but all that in the circled World
 ought to acknowledge, I will maintaine a-
 yf you vouchsafe my life, the which can be b-
 continuing in your disgrace. Well conceau-
 what end his speeches were directed, wher-
 grieved, because in her pensie thoughts she
 of the fairest and strongest Knights vnder
 Phæbus daylie shining course. And so lettin-
 the Princes no small grieffe) shee said, sir
 not by so many waies rest vanquished, it
 haue knowen y^e valour that the heauens ha-
 with, to acquite you of this combate. The
 his replie, running in hast vnto the warlik
 euerie one did know her) saying: why how
 Queene?) I neuer had thought, that your a-
 gainst this your Gretian Emperour and espec-
 me of my Nephew, whome I more tender
 will craue the amends of Claridiana, becau-
 it, for her sonne. Most mightie Emperour (re-
 rous Patrone) the honour of a distressed Ladie
 ded in Grecia that it makes me thinke I ha-
 complainte, and thereof will I intreate one
 tes present (poynting to the Knight of the
 to defend my reputation on my behalfe. Well
 (great Ladie answered he) and chiefly to
 maund, by how much the more, the glorie is
 at your hands Claridiano hath receaued, that

Mirroure of Knighthood.

meane the glad newes of the comming of
icler, Meridian, and Oristides with the
of Lyra, who are comming to the Cittie,
g of a mortall battell between my sonne
er, wherein both were conquerers of each
aulte then this should haue bene forgiuen
inge replied the Empres, for the ioyfull
giuen these Princesses. In faith the leste
princesse Oliuias (said Claridiana) for we all
of her greefes, and with reason, wanting
ler.

ey all arriued, they receaued one another
content in the world. Theere (faire La
dious trouble-some prouinitie, referring to
consideratiō of such courtesies that betwene
th occasions is required. Vce that worst
Claridiano that could speake neuer a word
for she was so free and graue, that it made
at her harte sufferd, keeping the Prince
rfull torments. But to the purpose: Tri
tes are these that are ordained to drowne
most memorablist that euer in the world

pointed for chalengers, and their defens
tustes to be solemnized twenty daies af
oian Oristides, the haughtie Bransineano
sant Prince Brandezell of Percia, and of
inea a knight no doubt of the brauest
som a litle before the Emperor had knight
d with them was the rozagious Clarindo
d) sonne vnto Lindaraza and the Prince
were these knights that euerie one said,
the Greeke Ladies would be well defend
began to prepare their armour, horses
ts of war & the gallant amorous youtnes
dies for fauzes against that daye. The
Emperor

18871

The second Booke of the third Part

Emperour commaunded againe, that proclamation with safe conduct should be published throughout all his Empyre, for all Nations and knightes whatsoeuer. Whereby the citie, both within and without was so filled with multitudes of armed knightes, as if it were on the point of warre. Where we must leaue them, returning to our loued & despairing Rosabell, that with his great friend Oristoldo of Antioche, returned to Niquea, because they would there discharge their promise.

CHAP. V.

What in Nyquea befell vnto the Princeesse Rosabell & Oristoldo about the libertie of the three Kings.



With greater griefe then may be imagined, they took their leaues of their four friends, hauing lost the gallantest Lady vnder the starrie Canapie of Heauen, and knowing no certaintie where she might be, the poore knight traueled the most afflicted in the world, thinking that he should neuer see her more, to assuage which sorowes nothing preuailed the comfort of his deare Oristoldo, that more felt his paine then if it were his owne.

It is proper vnto louers, to feare the thing loued, though hauing it present, then how much the more, seeing it absent, and so doubtfull, and not knowing where it was. At length, (deare Distresse of a reiected soule) they arrived at the spring of a cleare fountaine, where sitting downe they eat of such meate, as the discreet Allirio had provided, not without infinite sighes of the Heroike louer Rosabell, to whome the gallant Prince of Antioche thus spake.

If all the aduentures of the worlde (magnanimous Prince) might happen to the content and sozt to euery ones desire,

The second Booke of the third Part

And vs, shall acknowledge the duttie that we all doe owe you. There did the Tynacrian well know his father, and brothers, and perceiuing that he in the Purple was his cosen, highly reioyced to haue such kindred. Notwithstanding, seeing what little honour he had gotten in that battaile, he saide vnto the Moore: Thou seeest King of Mauricania, that these Knights haue knowen each other, whereby it is impossible we should end our combate, and bycause the night approcheth, as also for that among them I haue such kinsfolkes that knowing me would disturbe vs, therefore while they be thus busie take vp thy Lady behind thee, and stay for me in the forest whither I will followe thee, and their onely death shall part our fight, the which, for many causes I doe: For no lesse doest thou greeue me wearing that armour, then the Grecian Princes, that demaunds them of thee. Be it as thou wilt haue it, replied the furious Pagan. And so with y swiftest running of their horses, taking the Lady, they thrust themselues through y woods. But with the nightes approche, the Tynacrian lost his waye, wandring farre from the place the Pagan did expect him. To each of them befell things worthe the rehercall, as shalbe mentioned in his due time. For now the battaile betwene Rosicler and Eleno must not be forgotten, which seemed but then to begin. For either had rather dye then in that presence to shewe want of valour. Well did y Greeke Alphebo knowe both deuises, and therefore did he cast himselfe betwene them, saying: Giue ouer braue Knights, for twiue cosens there is no reason to terminate so fierce a fight. Both withdrew together, and perceiuing their deceit, they unlaced their Helmes, & the Dacian hauing his beard wel growen, they remained so like, that by their face none could distinguish them. They went to kisse the Emperours hands, who with a Fathers loue embraced them with these words.

Oh happie day, wherein my sonne and deare cosen are come to me. By the change of your armour, I know not which

18871
of the Mirrour of Knight

which is Rosicler, yet neuerthelesse shall
me thinke but that I haue Don Eleno of
armes, to whom I will now satisfie th
him in the Citie of Cymarra. It is I (re
fell in the greatest erro2 that euer King
therefoze I doe beseech your Soueraign
don it me, and in signe you haue done so,
part: For the first (braue Cousin) answ
you haue your wish, for I dare not thin
within Constantinople, Don Eleno bein
touching the last, there is no excuse must
haue you in my power, I will not let yo
mise your Maiestie (replied the Prince
Knight, it is in my power to doe no other
my companie behinde: and so it will be
not retourne: But I pawne mine Honor
not to depart your Emprere til I haue do
your selfe, & to my Ladie Aunt the Empr
dition I let you goe (answered the Emper
not be merry till you accomplish it. The
ding a Launce, and taking his leaue of hi
toured with more furie then doth a Co
the ayze, leauing them all contented with
sition, who with grieve for want of his
brauely his inchaunted horse, in such sort
that befoze hee met her hee shed manye
with no small dangers: what they were
specified: For now Meridian and the Tro
time, unbuckled their helmes, and went t
Emperour, who entertained them with t
the highest God aboue all others had giue
Let vs go (braue Princes) backe to the Ci
presse must enioy with vs these ioyfull ti
would be first that should tell it them, wh
satisfaction of the discontent I gaue you (g
taking away the Princes my deare Child

nd Booke of the third Part

had any arriued vnto the topp of true Imitating of crosse successes only to knowe of valiantnes it is, wherewith their honours, as also to haue mighty & cruell foes, hard victorie, the triumph maie be more achieved without blood. Neuer did Alexander the Macedonian conqueror your Predecessor your Kingdome, then of the Vertians, because much blood. And that for which apparant to preferre all perills was for the famous desire of the same would reioyce him, upon the borders of the riuer Sale he musternished host, receiuing a pleasure exceeding his wauering of his displayed ensignes in the noice of his barbed speeres, & the sound of military instruments for warre: But what was, his marching against Asia. And the cause of it, this was his answer to euerie I know it will cost much, and that is so much. He neuer did conceaue, a thought that so many yeares was in building, in making firme land in middle of the sea: for his perpetuall fames immortalized hoped.

And (magnanimous Prince) because content with his wil that hath it so appointed, your glozie of a valiant sufferance, by giuing feeling this businesse thus grieuously. I ght therof, & what reason there is to waile with eternall teares of liuing luke-warme I finde it a stayne to your honour, a blemish, and a weakning of your valour, insufficient to resist, a more unhappier chance. place so secret but it will be knowne, and I dare without death to hinder what

only

of the Mirrour of K

only is due vnto your vertues? Lyriana is yours, and you her deare happen that this consideration, constant, and her absence tollerable: glad, became the faire youth Rosabell friends discourse, because hee so hee thus replied. Valiant Prince, now rest I fully satisfied, & happily terminate all our affaires, me so good a woes comforter, and your deare companie: and because dispaire, I will hope, and expect the hope of Lyriana, to both our euergo will not so farre prosecute her rigour not to shew me the place of her abode your mightie arme, I maye recoureares and your valour shall purchase more but so (deare Rosabell replied) for it should more easier be accomplished: And because I thinke Kings that so well ayded vs, we way: and let me not see you no more will but grieve me: And more to indured your father in his louing part the like fauour that yesterday you did not desist with content to part let therefore his magnanimitie not nor in mee no lesse loue and true affection towards yours, till in your behalfe to winne your happines.

But let vs goe, for now your sorrow one so to mitigate it: and let vs take affaires, admitting no battle one way we both demand it, we must suffer on their part. For this Souldan is vnto Gyants his friends, certainly it

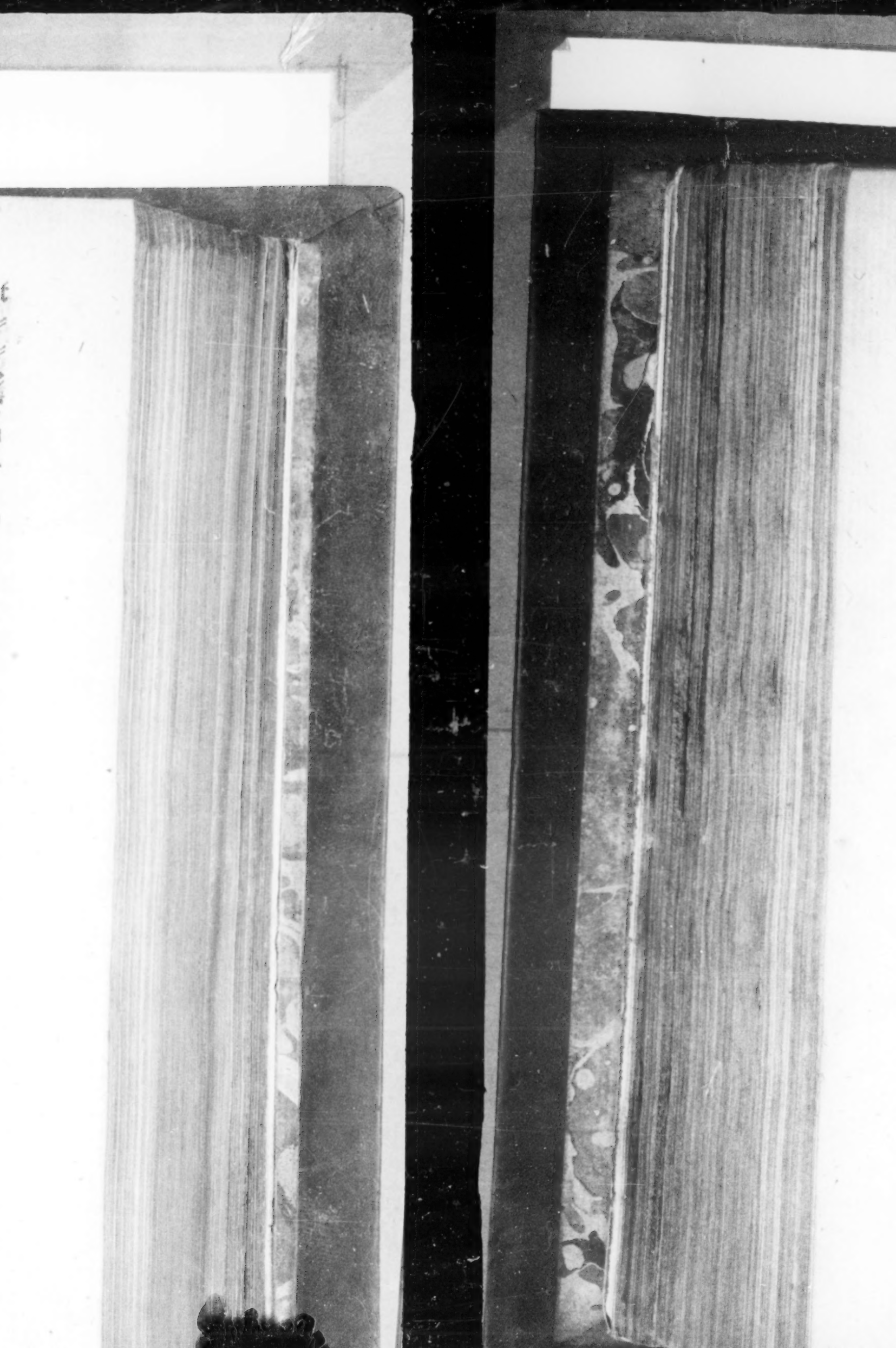
of Knighthood.

ies? And liuing assured that Li-
deare espouse, what euill maye
ion, wi'l not make gentle & plea-
able? Glad and in truth verge
Rosabell, with his tender har-
se hee knew he had reason, and
nt Prince and my soules treas-
ied, & more assured that we shal
fares, since fortune had reserud
, and griefes diminisher with
ecause it is no vertue vtterly to
pect how the heauens will dis-
euerlasting ioyes, for fortune
r rigour against me, as at least
r abode, that with the fauor of
reouer that felicitie, that my
urchase. I would it were no
plied the Prince of Antioch)
omplisht then the busines wee
inke it fitte we returne to the
we may set forwards in our
no more so passionate, for you
e tozments and more paines
ing pilgrimage, yet neuer had
you possesse, neuerthelesse, he
o prosecute his Chiuallries:
e no lesse shine in the Sunne,
ue amitie, then my Fathers
alse I sacrifice my soules life,

sozrow wil be iniust, hauing
s take all aduantage in these
ne without another, & though
ffer so many to vndertake yt
is verie subtle, & hauing ma-
ly it is like he wil to some of
3 them

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

maüded in the Arabian tongue, (y better to dissemble) what countrey that was. It is so little (sir bright) since we arrived here (answered Rosabell) that we are altogether ignorant of your demaund, having not met any of whome wee might knowe, what you desire. The arriving of another knight of as braue apparances as any of them, interrupted his replie: This was Don Clarissell, that guided by Lupericio, Gellafios maister, was come in the Souldans behalfe, though he arrived too late, for he had already sent to that purpose for a subiect of his the fiercest of many Cyants that he knewe, being come to them, with great courtesie he requested what Ben bo had done before. But as euerye one dissembled their knowledges, they stayde till they might meete with some of whome they might learne their doubt: Long stayed they not but they saw a Page in great hast come weeping from the Cittie, and meeting with the foure Princes sayde, Ah me, braue knights if in you there be what your gallantries doth manifest, now you may approue it, by succouring of three kinges, that vniustly are accused of y rape made of the Princesse and her couzen, by the deformedst giant in the vniuerse; & I am sure they are in no fault. Leade the way good Page, (sayd y couragious Rosabell) for I will for them hazard my person in any danger, and I will mine if it be needfull sayd Oristoldo. The Assirian that was somewhat bould, would no longer forbear, but sayde, I would not haue on my part knights so resolute. Then be you of the other sayd Oristoldo, and you shall see that our resolution is grounded on our armes and not on our tongues, & without more stay they rayned about their Horses, and with their swiftest pace they straight went to the Cittie. The lyke did the other two, remayning with great desire to combat w such confident knights, specially he in the black, whome Rosabells behauiour highly pleased, hee had reason for on horse-backe fewe were like him. At length the first two arrived at the pallaice after the Souldan had Dyned, being accompanied with his chiefe Nobilitie, because he would



18871

The second Booke of the third Part

happiest life : and now (Prince of misfortune) behooves it thee to pilgrimage throughout y^e worlds vast continents, to know her habitation : which thou hadst saued comming in time, & then who would haue bene able oz somuch as presumed to thinke in his trembling harte to take her from thy hāds : Oh halotie and presumptuous Knight, who may know what thou art, y^e I might make thee acknowledge y^e wrong thou hast done me : taking what only to my worthinesse was due : How maie I call my selfe Nephew to that mighty Bembó, y^e scourge & terror of all Greece suffering another to inioy whome thou dost loue : neuer more would I haue put on armour if I did not make him confesse this foule iniurie : And yet there is no reason why : for seing Liriana was of beautie Angelical, it was like, others would loue her : and if fortune did fauour him to carry her away, I haue no cause to lament, & bewaile, but my slow hart, and sluggish thoughts, y^e spurd me not afore this to visit her .

Oh my friend Nicandro, how maie I complaine of thee bycause it is thy fault : for hadst thou by thy skill aduertized me of this successe, who would haue deferd such a voiage, though it had cost him a thousand liues : and come, were it only but to see her, whom to me thou didst canonize for beautie, as the sole merito^r of my faith. So pensiue rested the braue greeke Rosabell, seing what that Knight did, and hearing what he said against his reputation, affecting that Ladie that more then his proper life he loued, that he knew not how to resolu^e himselfe, till Oristoldo perceauing his alteration stept to him, saying. Valiant Prince, seing by belate the Kings doe incurre so great danger, it is not lawfull you should procure now new battels : and especially he knowing they are prisoners about y^e seialing of y^e Princes, it cannot be but he will offer himselfe in that demaund, and thē in their defence will your combate be more iustified, thē at this instant : for though he loues whome you do, y^e extremity of contrarie passions may excuse you : but being assured of her loue towards you, great reasoⁿ haue you to forgive him. It is the wrong heerein I doe my Lade (replyed Rosabell.

The second Book

haue the Kinge of Garamanie
he would not beleue but he
that he might be more sure of
proude Grantelano Lord of
vnto him, though like a friend
power. There were no 20 km
withstand him in the feldes.

This Gyant was also in
to honour him more had inuit
manded the thre Kings to be
to whome the Souldan sayd. I
subiects doe object against you
in my deare Daughters rape,
some respect beleue the contr
of a battell: and so within four
Champion to combat against
all gned, who is the King of
The King of Garamanie thus

Greatly are we wronged (n
fle taken from our armes, kno
on whom we might repose so b
ready vrged that (sayd the Gy
that you thre might be admitt
sayth there is a law inuolate
for that, for I geue leaue, and
your behalfe, against all whom
taine you were confederates in
ana Princeesse of Niquea. As t
to answer, the couragious Gr
with his friend Orisoldo) who
vnto the Souldan, sayd vnto him
which he knewe he could well s
great Tittie (great Monarch of
to seek for the King of Garamanie
I vnderstoode what on thy beh
objected: And my selfe being ad

The Mirrour of Knighthood.

resolved to undertake the battle for him, and
the extremest hazard of my life, because I am
right. Greatly reioyced the imprisoned Prin-
come in such opportunitie, for they straight
his azure deuise, to whome the Souldan re-
ryall (Sir Knight) is already remitted to bee
omibate, and so there remaines no more then
es doe graunt it, and then may you straight

n (sayd the King of Garamantes to Rosabell)
iue you all my power thereto, resting not a
of the good successe, hauing so great iustice on
bzaue a knight to defend it. We graunt the
ther Kinges. Seing this is done (sayde the
ng himsele for the imposed charg) command
o (turned to him) the apparance of the cha-
beseech you that the prisoners may bee set in
battle ended, they may without impediment
deuillish furie did the furious Pagan steppe

Why how now Knight, so sure art thou of
foze thou seest me thou darest demaunde the
le? But now consider, knowing what thou
gainst whom, whether thou wilt yet affirme
Not only doe I it, sayd the (halwghty youth)
eth late till it be done. Then I aduise thee
o the Gyant) that if thou wilt thou mayest,
besides thy companion eight knights more,
r haue I chalenged. Gyant (replied y coue
e) all your bꝛode, thinks y w sely y outward
end any aduenture, & therefore presume you
sphemies, not vnderstanding that he which
e a knight, wil admit nothing w aduantage.
u go arme thy selſe, for onely w these armor
ue, & the iustice of my cause I expect thy co-
e, with the hoarse sound of a deuillish voice
Oh Mars what mighty wzong is this to
ntelmio, permitting that one Knight maye

The second Book

Rosabell, but your will be fulfilled together to follow your counsaile was true: for Bembo was the purpose, but to maintaine, the thing to y^e Princesse stealing. Aristoldo staid to defend it, there to beare away the victorie, be thies of the world, and he that great warres. He was verie of all his Nation. He would not him king, till he had traueled gouernors ouer his kingdome valour onely he departed from deuise, that many thought it was the amorouslest that euer he that was most loyall to Licia be married, he still doted on her and had referd the guerdon of her of his Lady: but if she retracted he would not forget her: for it from the beginning he had confidence had fortune but a little fauour the famous Princes of the world cruelly by loue persecuted, did not his high valour. From him departing where they had left the mornings approach, which scarce brightnesse of the Sunnes by their coursers, they had not galloped Nyqueas gates reflected on their did the valiant competitor do the the Bay Courser, without any such that euer was seene: for as such his louing friend the wise Nyca the two knightes before him, in his speede he overtooke them,

od.

his Beauer, &
been all three
come, and you
ue angred me :
r lines, which
handes, & cru-
o, and mildely
ng this matter
e not refuse to
en, this whole
ghty strength:
the Lyons, in
s Bembo quiet
ee vttered the
which being
t all the place
nd the time in
r employ it in
but together
the earth, and
et themselves
nd of so harsh
es of that Ro-
hen that of y
mount, to dea
f two to two,
th (oh ye glo-
of their cour-
at Onfholdo of
est spectators
combatants.
no had it was
ratio making
uerd, y few
his sword in
ngth that he
fozA

The second Booke of the third Part

looke me in the face, much more stay for me in the field, a way Captiue as thou art, thou shalt not thinke to haue so honorable a death as to die alone, for neuer shall the heauens suffer it to be said, that thou didst singly combate with me in open listes. Discourteous Giant farre more proude than valiant (saide the bould Britanian) take thy armes, for I alone will giue thee so much worke, that I will make thee wonder at the droppes of thy lines blood, that I will make thee sweat. Whellish furies answered the rauinous Lyger, is it possible such words should be spokē, about sufficient reuenge? And not respecting the Souldan, but his infernall rage, hee leapt to the gallant youth with his fist raised aloft saying, stay, for without armour I will terminate thy demand. Nothing did Rosabell feare him, but as he was striking, he parted aside, & with his hand he stroke him on the left cheek so braue a buffet, that hee tumbled at the Souldans feete at suche time as the valiant Bembo, and the gallant Affician entred the hall, whete seeing the hurlyburly went on forwards, to knowe the cause, and seeing the Giant casting blood through his mouth, and fier fro his eyes, going against his aduersarie, the Achayan with his couragious minde leapt between the hauing his sword drawne, and said keepe forth knights, for before the Souldan this is vnseemely. He was already risen, and commaunded the Giant to arme himselfe to end the battaile, who went to do it more to reuenge himselfe, than to obey a Lord whome he neuer acknowledged. And so was the amozous Bembo left between the Souldan, and the Greeke, who being inſourmed of the matter, more guided with desire to fight with any of them, than by reason, said that the strangers had been ouer bould before the King. The gallant Oristoldo could not endure it and therefore sayde. Truly (Knight) yf of so great experience you are in arms, as rash in iudging that you know not, it were not much I refused your battle. Neuerthelesse I affirme y not only we haue committed no misdemeanoꝝ before y King, but also y the giāt & you are disloyall, in ouer boldly prating before

He did ac-
and so all
ld, where
the earth
by them
e them li-
ertise the
, where
ed aboue
re easlye
he kings
er rescue
e Souldan
that vp-
ve of the
s the va-
rser, and
d in such
n, & chief-
his fierie
shaking
esented
his gal-
Rosabell
ntayned.
that be-
edes ac-
(conside-
er then a

H A P.

The second

forst him to let fall the
flowe in seconding
arme, that it made hi
with a strōg thrust str
as had not his armour
cer it had pierst his b
what loose his bzeath
him like a praying bu
ly to his praise, that h
ed, for discharging his
fers head, he made hin
row his visor, he wou
nesse of his horse made
that, as he would, he

Somewhat astonish
himselfe, beginning b
added admiration to t
The which was with
of that incomparable f
met in the middle of th
of many gazing eyes w
fearing in the meane

Unto the God of hi
commend himselfe, w
with more horroz the
stuous Sea with the f
the immoueable Rock
middelt of his strong
stirroppes, with most
wardes on the horses
not whether on horse-
the force of the incoun
ground Rosabell had
saddle pummell, and lo
place amazed at the in
gyante in the middle

ond Booke of the thir d Part

all the bzidle out of his handes: hee was not
 ing another on the side vnder his left
 de him shake therewith, and helping him,
 it strake against his brest, with such force,
 mour been forged by so cunning an Artifi-
 his body frō side to side. It made him some
 death, yet not so, but that he turned vppon
 ing vulture, giuing him his answere so high
 hat he thought himselfe sufficiently satisfi-
 ng his blow on his helme, euen to his cour-
 de him bend his, shedding much blood tho-
 e would haue giuen another, but the swift-
 e made him lose it, passing so farre forwarde
 d, he could not wound him.

Monished did Sacridoros deare sonne recouer
 ing between them so equall a fight, that yt
 on to the wondering senses of the beholders.
 without measure increased with the sight
 able furie, wherewith the twoo worthies
 e of that large place, on whom the millions
 eyes were so fixt, that winke they durst not,
 eane time they would incounter.

d of his Father did the amorous youth re-
 lfe, which was of such effect, that meeting
 o; then doe the angrie billowes of a tempe-
 y the furie of contrarious windes, beate on
 Rockes, the Pagan hit Lyriana's louer in y
 rong shield, that hee lost his bzidle and his
 y most part of his saddle, casting him backe
 orses creeper, in such a traunce, y he knew
 horse-backe he were left o; no, the which by
 incounter broke his backe, that falling to the
 ell had no other shift but to set his hand on y
 and leape of with great ligeritie, leauing y
 the incounter hee had made, for hitting the
 middle of his great shield, it clearely pierst it,
 and

18871

of the Mirrour of

and striking him a little belowe
 woundes are most perillous, to
 breath it was of such effect, that
 it thrust him with such mightine-
 ouer saddle and horse backe: it tu-
 earth, making all the place & peo-
 All the beholders, in spight of th-
 guard, with a generall voice app-
 mightinesse of the iealous King
 Greeke because of his deuise. So
 (though with great paine) he rose
 Courtelare, he went towards
 like a politike Knight prepared
 But first he looked how his friend
 taining his fight, with no lesse t-
 It grieved him because he sawe
 winded, and quicker in his stro-
 gallant Orisoldo lost no ground
 worlde's worthies he was repute

But a while leauing them,
 Greeke with the fierce Gyant, di-
 rall strokes, that the farthest re-
 shooke with the blowe. His kn-
 faire Louer of Liriana sett in such
 not where he was: But he had
 venturous blow, for not reach-
 strooke with his point close to hi-
 that renting all the thicknesse of
 peece, it made him a long wound
 abundance of blood. A gelded W-
 fierce, then with his wound the P-
 for rozing against heauen, & wit-
 ling his Gods, he began to bzand
 mightinesse, that therewith he ne-
 he made him tremble like an Asp-
 then winde. Among the many

The second Bo

The end of the dāger
Knights, about the



With nothi
did the m
the street
tie) when
land, wh
was wo
the proude King Grantelme
when he entred Bablon,
because he had taken y^e So
no? Lozd but did accompa
it seemed only an immag
with him, then did guard
in the middle of two yout
neither carried his armes
in taking them, thinking
mounted on the mightiest
of colour he was roane, a
swiftnes, that was such a
the edge of a sharpe sword
with such grace, that a m
so? though the Giants he
strength sufficed for his w
His armour was of a skie
azure field, in his shield for
in the middelt without ar
ting him that ended that a
thereof: so? one day being
ants would haue stollen a
sword alone rescued her f
their heads for recompence

• d Booke of the third Part •

CHAP. VI.

of a dangerous battaile betweene the foure
about the libertie of the three Kings.

nothing so great an honourable frayne
the mighty Emperoz Titus passe through
streets of Roome (natures rarest beau-
ty) when hee triumphed ouer that sarced
ty, wherein the woorkes of our saluation
were wrought, as that which attended on
Antelmio: That of Alexander the great
of Ion, was not comparable to this: and
on the Souldans part, there was no Prince
to accompany him, so gorgeously attired, as
an imaginarie vision: More people came
to guard the listes. He himselfe came last
of the youthes Nephewes to the Souldan, yet
in armes, because he would delay no time
in making euerie minute a yeere. He was
on the strongest horse for strength y^e was knowne,
white, and called Bollador, because of his
whiteness such as he might passe his carries along
with sword, he came praucing vp & downe
at a mans heart could desire no more:
his heauinesse were extreame, yet his
weight, had it been farre greater.
a skie coloure with many scarres, in an
field foure Giants headlesse, & himselfe
without armes, sauing his sword, represent-
ing that aduenture, as the true conqueror
being without armour, those foure Gi-
ants slay his wife, and hee with his
sword her from their villanies, striking off
the heades of their madnesse.

So

1887
of th

So soone as iring his
said to the Knightaile for
against him: w^h,
shall see, how floyre in
yet notwithstanding the we
now the heauenly duetie
ell sword. On hooe, as
to pacifie him, (s there)
concerneth and expected.
fight with a sin and his
assembly is vna longer
and so I am of
the russet arm obtained,
him with his g because
vaunts that such I wil
heard of the Go Rosa-
heard. A sauager son by
such proude bo and ba-
deedes: No long keepe.
with his compa puldan)
al of the with the punish-
one against an oim doth
a quill, and dull ig your
maine orators raise Le-
Quenes of leari
clare in an Heronights
y any mortal me impri-
ries of beauties, desy-
ses they met, theid Don
Antioch, w such. And
were left bloodlesoners,
with so braue ab their
much to see him ydes to
him lose both his: fiede
spied it, trait he who go-
had he made agai, who
were

The second Booke of the third Part

one to his content vpon his shield, that the finest of the t
per vnable to resist that strength, it was cut quite asunder,
so tormented the youths strong arme, that through the pain
he thought it lost. His shield fell on the ground, & his arme
so hung downe, that euery one iudged it cut. Aside stept th
courageous Greeke, for the paine admitted nothing else.
Well did the valiant Oristoldo perceiue it which grieued
him to the soule, doubting the successe of the fight being con
fronted with such cruell enemies. But desirous to help his
friend, because the Gyant perceiued the effect of his blowe
followed him with a strong thrust, brauely pusht him in th
backe from him, and spurring his good horse, (then whic
none in the world mounted a better beast) he sideling incou
tered the Gyant in so good a time, that he tumbled him a
Rosabels feet, who lost not that opportunitie: for as he fel
(helping himselfe a little with his painfull arme) he gaue
him on the shoulders such a blowe, that he pearst it to th
bone, leauing him somewhat breathlesse. For the want o
blood that from his wounds ranne. Neither was the A
chayan so slowe, but with his bay he arryued vpon y Greek
faster then imagination, and taking him somewhat bu
sied with the Giant, he strooke him backwards so fierce
blowe, that hee sent him forwards euen where the Gyant
was, and so their meeting was the cause he fell not, thoug
he rested sore bruised. Alreadie was Oristoldo come, wh
with such furie laid on his Helme, that the sparkes of fir
which from it he strooke, cinged all his yeallow feathere
plumes, that like a despairer he did weare. He scape no
without recompence, for reaching at him with eager dea
to execute his blow, he closed so nigh him that he could not
saue only cast his strong arms about him, & with his dag
ger, ere he could helpe himselfe or be succoured, gaue him
troublesome wound vpon his left arme: with one leape wa
Rosabell with them, and so stricke a downe right blow o
the furious Bembo, that cutting away all his skirt on th
side, he grievously wounded him on the right thigh, whi
for

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

forst him to let his aduersarie goe : and though it so well
fell out, yet it grieved the halwghtie Greeke to see the euill
proceeding in that battle, and with what shamefull disor-
der. Greatly did he desire that his were on horse-backe y
better to succor his friend, whome he knewe to bee in some
distresse : but yet he resolved to hazard it at once. So he
went vnto the Pagan, that like a bayted Bull did roare and
warding a mightie blow, he stept in with his right foot for-
ward, striking him on the outward side, y almost he cut his
thigh cleane asunder. Great was the noise throughout the
place, and greater the doubt of the victorie: five woundes,
and all verie dangerous hath the Pagan, two on his brest,
one in his throat, another on his shoulder, and the last on
his thighe. All the field doth he bedewe with blood, & hadd
for all that wounded Rosabell in thzee places, and so tyed
him that he was scarce able to sturre. Hee closed with the
Gyant on such a sudden, that amazedly he had verie neare
throwen him downe, for as he had fore-thought it, he en-
tered somewhat lowe, and taking him betwene his legs, he
hadde almost raysed aloft, but against his owne shoulders,
did the Gyant stay himselfe, and so both so long strided
that both fell downe together. They were not on y ground
when the valiant youth with his poniard, would terminate
that warre: But the Pagan, with all his strength sudden-
ly snatcht it out of his hand, wherewith he had there slaine
him had not hee drawen the Gyant, with which either
procured to end the others life. A happie starre did here de-
fend the Prince, for casting himselfe aside he scapt the dan-
ger of the blow, hauing his armour but a little scracht ther-
with. But he happening on a better place thrust his to the
middle into his belly, wherat w a fearefull grone he loosed
his aduersary, & both stept to their swords, but the Gyant
being so meake could not moue about: which being noted
by y youth seming to feare him gaue back, suffering y Pagā
to follow him, who was scarce win his reach, but drawing
strēgth frō weaknes, he gaue him such a thrust y had it bin
w moze aduise, he had out-right kild him: yet rest ed he not

18871
e of the third Part

emselues, for the tumult be-
erupon Oristoldo set him selfe
wounders in their defence,
is mortall, till the Kings des-
which being done, the furious
to fight valiant Princes,
, for I being well acquainted
tie, will without danger safe-
ou will haue it (Sir Knight
h willingly we would let the
e had done vs, another time
ll. And so loosing the raignes
is he cutt his passage through
it he which could faster flie
. It was admiration to see
bowes ouer horse and all the
lith no lesse courage followed
h was lessened by the kings
they issue out of the Cittie
if their valour. The Souldan
ed : but the two Knights so
pacified him, commanding
aded him to forget his dis-
ich he the sooner did because
from Lupercio to this effecte.
Emperor and puissant Soldan
riend Lupercio wissheth thee
tall quietnesse & end of trou-
l forknowen all the successe
nt of this present combate,
ize thee, that those Kinges
no faulte against thee : but
y ending the battaile, are
nightinesse stealing away
hough both the one and the
others

of the Mir

others were left with
haue helped thee, in
they liue with such Ro-
laice : and for their lib-
it must be, for that it i
thereof, as of other thi
all in all wishing the
immortall Gods graue
cure.

*Some what pleased re-
ter, seing thereby that
wer. Greatly did he h
be so great Princes and
them we must a while re*

How the Kings dep-
nally bound vn-



With
ly fr
quea
far
ceat

The Mirrour of Knighthood.

est without them, because with my skill I
e, inchaunting them in such a place, where
uch Royalty as if they were within thy pal-
their libertie I cannot yet finde when or how
hat it is of such difficultie. Of the successe
her things will I in due time aduertise thee,
ing the fulnesse of thy content, the which the
s graunt thee, as they canne, and I doe pro-

The wise Lupercio.

sed rested the Souldan with the wise mans let-
that his Daughter was not in his enemies po-
d he honour the two Knights, knowing them to
es and so valiant of their handes, where leauing
hile returne to Rosabell.

CHAP. VII.

s departed from the Princes resting eter-
d vnto them, and what happened vnto
them with a Knight.

th incomparable ioy, did the two Princes
y friendes issue out of the Cittie of Ny-
quea after they hadde to their euer-living
fames terminated their busines. They
cast not till they came to the Sea-side
where

The second Booke of the third Part

wounding, or receiuing the greatest blow that in
day he had felt, which falling on the toppe of his
where not able to penetrate, it styste alway all the
vnto the shoulder, where staying with mightie
made him set his knees on the earth. Follow the
ould the Gyant, but the youth knowing his dan-
his sworde long wayes betweene them, which
m staye, till he well recovered his feete. Alreadie
Pagan though wearied, and so he would end that
ting fight, with one blowe, which at his aduersary
who assured of the perill, with a leape made him
together with his life: for he fell vpon his owne
following the furie of his armes. The which no
id Rosabell perceiue, but with both hands he laide
s left syde (and as there commonly the armour is
, he opened it euen to his entrailes, where he like-
ted his heart, and giuing passage for his life, to re-
eserued death, he slaug him dead at his feete. Vce
flowe in taking of Bollador that famous horse be-
to the dead Gyant, and mounted thereon at such
sencelesse he saw his good friend, carryed about the
in his steede. Immeasurable was the grieve that
ined, supposing him dead: and so he set himselfe be-
lonte More (that followed him) saying: Stay
for to strike him that cannot defend himselfe, ra-
inisheth then augmenteth the fighters honour.
e, and one of the courteoust in the worlde, was the
rable Louer, but he then was so cholericke, that
g on him, the aunswere he gaue him was a beas-
e, which the Greeke so felt, that like an Aspicke, he
seeing the discourtesie of his enemye, that with
ides he discharged on his inchaunted Helme so
lowe, that it sounded like a bell, calling him in a
long his horse backe, shedding an infinite quane-
ood through his mouth. Which when the Soule-
, and supposing, by his behauiour he shoulde be
his

of the Mirro

his sonne, he cast downe
life) saying, Knight ha
this Knight, and also ad
Mightie Lorde (aunsw
my very soule, to haue
part of the great desire I
bound thereto. And see
also because I and my co
haue much to doe in anot
Commaund my cosen t
friends to be deliuered
staye.

That (replied the So
the victorie of the fight re
their fault was against
see it corrected. Great is
bell) and farre greater is
violating your royall w
self Knight would to his
Your vnreuerence Knig
that it deserues no other
ment that against such a
allow. If that laue a
promise (sayde Onstold
gillatoz.

Not farre was the ro
arrogancy, began to lay
son them. Betweene th
ring the Souldan to liber
Clarissell, that rested grea
seeing that not onely th
but also offered violence
nobleneesse not permitti
helpe them: Which the
were alreadie alone tw
ing where the kings w

Mirroure of Knighthood.

dolone his golden Scepter (feare
ight haue done: for I yelde the bat
also adiudge you both free thereo
(answered the Prince) I do re
haue this occasion, that I ma
esire I haue to serue you, being b
nd seeing there restes no moze to
my companion (that alreadie wa
n another place, where wee be e
osen the King of Garaimantes,
ered vnto mee: for wee can no

the Souldan) though you haue ob
ight remaines to my disposing,
ainst my state and Crowne, and s
eat is the wzong offered vs (said
ater is it done vnto your owne pe
all worde, which the meanest
to his vtmost strength procure to
Knight is so great (replied the S
other aunswere, but the sharpe
uch as you the law in my kingdo
we agreeth with the first, touchin
(toldo) you may glozie to bee a w

he royall guard, that seeing the k
to lay about them, determining to
ene them kept the valiant Bembo
liberate the prisoners, the like d
greatly affectionate to Rosabell
ly they would not deliuer the pris
lence vnto the Knights, whic
mitting, drew forth their swo
h then was needelesse, for in the
e twentie thousand disguised, w
s were, had cast them weapons

rd Part

of them: for the
rtised of their be-
them. So soone
he king of Gara-
saide, while the
rious knightes,
, how may wee
many great pe-
: Wee can finde
erits, but that ye
nd states in any
eof, which to vs
we remaine in-
enefits receiued.
Kinges and my
ne wee haue our
(most mightie
what this knight
ting your many
n to fauour vs.
honour that shal
at my compani-
o binde our liues
ou vse vs as the
ch remoted coun-
ames, you can-
oche, called the
ht of the groue of
cannot remem-
his Fortune so
meeting, wher-
me league of in-
aintained: and
, and how the
, he promised
me

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

me his ayd together wth my other foure cōpanions my great
friends with whose vni ted valour, and of your persons wee
brought her away: But (oh despightfull fortune (sayde he
with his eyes full of water) that scarcely did let me see, much
lesse enioy the happines she gaue mee, because with the ex-
treamest crueltie she could deuise, she did bereaue me of her.

Whereupon he told them the maner of her taking away,
as is set down in the end of the first booke of this third part.
Greatly grieved the Kings for the Ladies losse, chiefly for
the knights sorrowe, but being vnable to redresse it, they
comforted them as became true friendes of their qualities.
And seing that the Kings longer staying in that land would
bee daungerous, they counselled them to depart vnto their
owne countries. From whence they might obtaine a peace
from the Souldan. They all liked well thereof, and so they
toke their leaues of their friends, taking their right course
to their kingdoms, where they got y^e Souldans fauor, which
proued not a little costly to Grecia: For these Kings were
they that most persecuted her in her generall warres, as in
the fourth part at large shalbe related.

Somewhat from the Hauen did the two valiant Princes
lye themselves downe to passe away the lingring passage of
of the sullen night, making their supper of such prouision as
Allurio had brought with him, which done, after a litle chat
they parted a sunder to sleepe vnder the shadowe of pleasant
smelling trees. A little more towards the Sea did Rosabell
cast himselfe, who one while thinking on his Lady, and a-
nother on his voyage vnto Greece, not letting himselfe to be
known vntill his deedes might declare the Royaltie of his
discent, lay tumbling on y^e grasse, till he fell a sleepe, which
was so little that the Ecchoe of sighing groanes proceeding
from some that cōplained, were of force to waken him, who
being of nature bould, and of nouelties desirous, quickly set
himselfe on foote, and with his sword in hand, went strait
to the place whence he heard the plaintes: and so going in-
to a little Meddowe, vnder the spreading of a towzing Cæ-
dar

great
s wee
yde he
much
e ex
f her.
way,
part.
y for
they
ties.
ould
heir
eace
they
urse
hich
were
s in

aces
e of
n as
hat
ant
bell
a
be
his
ich
ing
ho
set
ite
in
a-
dar

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

he might content he selfe with the children shee hath of
rightie a Prince, and not topsey turvie turne and offend
worlde with her vanitie, & mere follie, as to hope for his
for his reuenge? and well doe wee knowe that a wo-
s reuenge is but y aboundance of feruent desire of things
things. None more then she I am sure would grieve
his death? because with reason the losse of such a per-
might iustly be lamented by his Daughter Rosalura, &
e should cast her fame and honour on the dice, being cau-
f so many deathes as haue already happened: for the
do both wel know there is none therein, that (against his
is able to make that Prince leaue the listes. A greater
ur were it for her to dissemble her angrie loue, as doth
Anne Polliphebo who is reputed the flower Chualrie,
ing in nothing more then of such a Father, & not pro-
her selfe his head, at whose countenance the very hea-
tremble.

nd so (sir Knight) the great loue I beare you hath for-
ne to this discourse: because with more immortall ho-
, by louing & by your haughtie daeds shall you sooner ob-
your Ladies loue, then by so doubtfull and vncertaine
anes that can nothing yeild then a blot to your reputa-
Attentiuely did the Prince of Niquea heare him thin-
he should know him, and well noting his speeches, &
auing hee grounded them vpon sufficient reason, was
ing to his counsell: but surprized with the memorie
s Ladies commaunde, hee did reiect those perswasions,
se he would bee obedient, and so shewing some anger,
ed thus.

ruely (sir Knight) I knowe not what you haue seene in
or in what distresse you haue succoured mee, that now
uing, you should with so large a discourse strue to per-
e me that there is difficultie, and the greatest possible,
head the Emperour of Constantinople, did I not respect
hou didst say thou diddest, and doest loue me, I would
thee know, what twere to counsell him that requires

The second

dar he saw a knight
with Gold. He wa
newes betokning
helme, with a hat
ting, to knowe the
ther giue it him wi
hide it, for with D
foorth, he began to

*Faire spreading C
That you doe see
Mount ye aloft,
Prince Lindoria
Whose teares tha
Your rootes will
When heauens we
Upon your bowe
And on your bark
My sou'es grea
My dangers can
With which I lou
Though that it d
Pyne may my har
For publishing my
To whome all kne
I well doe knowe
The waightie gri
Which makes me
And daies seeme
But yet in midst o
This for my comf
When as I thinke
Where yeelding,
Happie Tynacria
Lindorianos blisse*

18871

Of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

the Sunne of Heauen, the comfort of this earth :
in whom I ioye, for whom I drawe my breath.
Oh suffer not this Goddesse, Natures ioye :
to be disgrast, by being ouer coye.
To his complaints, that liuing her adore :
constant and firme by fayth, what would you more.
To see her I will untill I truely knowe :
from whence the cause of her disdain doth growe.
Which loue (after my death) let her requite :
Not with like loue, for that, I neuer might.
But with her knowing that I haplesse die :
Refus'd of comfort, from me that did flie.

The extremitie of passions were such and so many which
tormented the louer, that not onely hindered his songe, but
his breath, accompanied with a suddaine fainting, that
traunce least him speechlesse leaning against the Cedar
being past, he returned with a sigh, (that I knowe not
if hart it would not mollesie,) but hers (oh pardon me)
is the swæte insulting enemie of my life, and sayd. Oh
how doest thou spare none from burning with thy vn-
quenching fier? Oh you mightie Princes, by fortune exal-
d to the highest top of honor, I nothing enuie your estates
if it be touched with loue? Oh Gods, how farre hap-
py enioyning a contented life) where I, yf I had the of-
ice of a laboring Countreyman, and not the tytle of so great
prince, that my starres haue giuen mee? But oh cruell
fate, & more intollerable grieve, what, Oh yes, thither
you follow me hauing as great a power in a poore cot-
age as in a Princes Court? And therefore seeing I must
live and must liue thereby, I will admit no comfort : but
shall come from Rosaluyra, for the swætest otherwise
hatefull, sower and abortiue? Oh despightfull châce,
p unhappie, & unheard of that I should loue, and not
bestow it to the Empreesse of beautie : and of my Idolatrie

The second Booke of the third Part

it not? I well perceiue (answered Rosabell) thou speakest with affection: but because thou shalt knowe what thou haddest to doe, I desye thee from hence vntill the Sunne approche vpon thy vnlawfull enterpryse, that he who shall first loose his saddle or any peece of his armour, shall be vanquished, promising to perfourme what the Conquerour shall commaund, and so shall you reuenge your selfe. I am contented (saide the stout youth) that thou may knowe I am able to terminate this deede. Then let the knight that here commeth be the Iudge (answered Rosabell) poynting to Oristoldo that came with Allirio to lead the horses to seeke for the Prince. We it as you will haue it (said Lindoriano: For he that can loue such a lady, knoweth how to aunswere for her.

Presently did they declare the challenge vnto the gallant Prince of Antioche, who thereof was glad, because otherwise the Niquean should not scandalize the Emperors his Graundfather. On the best horses that the vniuers did knowe, mounted the two Heroicke warriors, and in the middle of the Meadowe, turned either against the other and both together with an assured hope of victorie, though one must of necessitie be vanquished. A thing worzhie admiration was it, to see that scarce they had turned their fierie coursers, when through the Dakes, Elmes, and Cedars, issued from the woods, Siluanus, attended with all his troope of Faunes and siluan dwellers, comforted with all the desert and Forrest Nymphes: Glaucus with his Trytones left his waterie habitation: and all with a desire to see that memorable combate had left their earthen and water Cauernes. The heauens cleared their light more brighter then at such times was their custome, and in the ayre appeared Mars in his throne, and in another little higher sate Cupid, for both Gods might learne principles in both sciences, of the Warriors: because if it is so, it is because he loues: Whereof no experience can better approue it, then by a bloudie Combate: and both gallant

hthood.

all as Mars and Cupid:
e shoulde sit as Judges
e leaning on the steeled
er on the Coate of wise
thereof: when with
eth, they meet in the
ith such an impetuous
y the Gods had fallen
ncounter, which were
gh then there no starre
t fild they the ground
er with as much Da-
eely Judge could haue
e, but ere he stayed it
rsarie with his sword,
owes that they humi-
endshippe, y was be-
hey assured of cythers
est Battailles of the
antest thereof. It
rianas brother, for the
slowe in his executi-
ith him, trusting on
d not his aduersarie
hunted Lion, and
enemie, attributing
to end the warre) to
low, that hee could
ade him with twoo
er of them (had he
utright: Neuerthe-
rooper, and as with
strike him sidelong
at asunder two buc-
eth his arme he had
chopt

The second Booke of the third Part

the sole Goddesse, and that I thus must languish in
her knowledge? Well it must be so, she will haue her
deseruedly accomplisht, and I will remaine adoring
more then euer was Lady loued: But in recompence
maund a thinge so small as Trebatios head, is a diminution
of the high deserts of her incomparable merits. What
way (oh Gods) to procure my content, I am resolued
because hers consisteth therein: But yet yf by my life
and weeping experience she would be assured of my faith
death in this enterprize were eternall felicitie.

But oh slowe louer, and more bashfull wooer, why
thou linger knowing there is no other meanes for thy
pinesse: Intollerable and more then may be imagin
Inzōg agaynst thy Lady thou comittest, in this delay:
upon, with a sudden hast that in such cases happens, f
ced on his helme, had tooke vp his weapons, calling
Squire for his horse: But ere it was brought him Ro
issued out of his ambush: For knowing the Knight
sonne vnto the Souldan of Niquea, and brother to his
Ladie, it grieued him because he had vnderaken such
terprize agaynst his Grandfather. The occasion and y
thereof hee had tould Oristoldo as hath been largely di
sed in the first of the second part.

And appproching to the Knight, with a gallant audac
sayd. By that I haue heard (sir Knight) I haue vnder
you are Lindoriano Prince of Niquea, the Knight tha
my soule doe loue, and euen to the same it grieues me
haue vnderaken a demaunde so perrilous as that ag
Emperour Trebatio: for you must consider how that
and her Mother rather proceede through hate then
son that bindes them to dissemble it: And if Garrofile
plaines of the Emperour, her selfe was the cause th
procuring to her honours cost the accomplishing of he
tent. And seing the Emperour did doe it, hee might
ther passe because the sacred law of marriage did forb
whereof she was aduertized when she had him in pri

chopt of
doth he
recouere
quest of
would n
hit him
that fro
Thousan
went cra
about hi
horse hee
downe c
horse pu

Well
a flourish
it: But
a Bazeli
handes h
hee cast i
plate, he
fearing a
ther, (so
griefe th
cruell vsa
through h
follow hi
ling him
whom he

Grievou
ly becomm
onely ima
life, so: th
rayfed his
der the pa
him on the
all the circ

The second Booke of the third Part

pt of his head. Now is there no time for courtesies, now
he forget himselfe, and in this agonie in great rage hee
ouer his saddle, staying for the Prince that returned in
est of his pray. He let him come within him because hee
uld not lose his blow, but it was so much that he could
him no otherwise then close to his hilts with such strength
t from without, and within his helme hee fecht many a
ousand squadrons of fierie sparks that through the ayre
nt cracking like squibbes. He would haue cast his armes
out his necke, but hee was so nimble that spurring his
se hee made him misse of his purpose, almost tumbling
one carried by the force of his armes, yet fell he vpon his
se pummell.

Well did Lindoriano note his amaze, and so followed w
ozishing blow vpon his shoulders that he grievously felt
But it was to his euill for returning more fiercer then
Bazeliske, casting his shield behind his back with both his
ides hee layde vpon his aduersaries, that parted in two
cast it to the ground, together with a peece of his breast-
te, he trembled like a shakened leafe, so did the Judges,
ring at the sight of so braue a blowe. He seconded ano-
r, (for nowe is hee gouerned by rage, and not with the
ese that Liriana might conceaue hearing of her brothers
ell vsage) which was in such manner that casting blood
ough his mouth, his horse carried him about the field,
ow him would not the gallat Britaniā, whē himselfe cal-
g himselfe to accompt, howe that was Lindoriano wyth
om he fought.

riuously begā to chide himselfe for his offence, so greet-
becomming penitent for the fault that while hee stood
ly imagining thereon, yt had like to haue cost him his
, for the Nyquean returning to himselfe, twixt both hāds
sed his sword aloft, making the hard earth tremble vnto
the passage of his horse hoores, and so at his pleasure layd
on the helme that it dyued it downe, stryking awaye
the circuite thereof, it was not so waighty that sencelesse
his

of the

his steed boze him
with him any cour
him amaine, and w
blow to end that bu

The sight of this
Oristoldo to the har
ing appointed. Judge
dight in his intent f
reouer himselfe, a
him gozged with d
as he closed a little
was struck but on th
ter was bzused. Th
and yet no aduanta
field was strewed w
blows did tare. By
lie heauens, as mess
at Rosabel seeing th
concerned him, being
Grandfather, a quat
ripiated his dyurnal
a battle so long indur
let flie at him: closed
one of the bzanest w
their horses more fir
then the rooted rooter
leauē vnto the comba
ayre.

Nowe maner of wa
dare were insalade in
rous desynes. But th
braue closures, and fu
more experience then
ted, amounted not to
wed they ensamples
them gazed, and docu

The second Booke of the

burning Charriot of the Sunne the
Constantinople walles where wee must
aine adventures which in that sea

CHAP. VIII.

that happened in Grecia to Don Celind
Caliza his sister, with a Knight,



I haue with such deligh
with the halwghtie de
had I not remembred
Saints and Venus votre
the Scythian Princeſſe
with obliuion, did I n
displeasure. But now with your
them I dare not) I do enter in the
s actes which were so memorab
e doth set them forth: the which h
nted habitation, & entring within t
had in sight the worzhie Zafinthus
site to the Corinthian gulffe, wher
y trauailed to the Grecian Emper
of the braue tryumphes, that shou
ous Citie of Constantinople. In mil
lighted the two brothers, & thinkin
y other place they would be found
hes, comaunded their ship to be gui
ome thing remote from the Citie, &
arrined, and taking land, they entr
ſſes, taking the next waye to Const
mined to linger thereaboutes the ti
aſſes, which might be some vii. or
fortune led them to paſſe away th
where the iealous Sarmatia bewail
ſhe had parted from Brandafidell, ſy

the third Part

As they approached Con-
stantinople, they must leave them through-
out the season did befall.

III.

Celindo, and the beauteous

delight bene carryed away.
The deedes of Rosabell, that
showed what affection (deare
of yourresses) you shewed to
celle I had ouerpast them
I not feare the rodde of
your fauours (for with
in the relation of their fa-
uorable that Lirgandeo at
which hauing leste their in-
within the Sea of Greece,
thus Isle situated right
where they learned how
happy, against the solem-
it should be made in the
In millitarie actiōs great
thinking there better then
found by reason of the tri-
be guided to Arrissa, a ha-
Citie, where the eight day
they entred through y grene
Constantinople, but first
is the time that wanted for
vii. or viii. dayes. So
way the night, hard by the
bewailed her woes. For
dell, she cast her selfe from
her

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

her horse lamenting her misfortunes supposing that
loved Oristides, had forsaken her to Loue Floralinda
the Prince, Meridean. And they arrived at such time
forced by a Ielous spleene she said. Oh rauning er
that before I can begin to Loue, I must with Ie-
tormented? Oh Cupid if this be one of thy blowes e-
ed in all harts, how is it possible thou shouldst be h-
or to thee appeale, why shold any as to y Soueraine
and Iudge of the earth? how wilt thou haue, t-
dies shall worshippe and adore thee, if with I-
treames thou plaguest their tender harts? Apparen-
did I see in that valiant Prince to loue me, but more
ner haue I met in Greece that he abhors, me. O
Land only to me vnappie, I blame not thee but
starres that doe oppose their influences to ruinate m-
who would haue tould me thou shouldest be a sepu-
her that to thee came to seeke her life? O Gods ho-
better had I done to split my hart in Lacedemon v-
deare friends swoord, then to come to so great mi-
Greece? mightie will be the wrong I doe to Ladie
my death shall be published to haue been because I v-
beloued. But wretch that I am, why impute I in h-
of disloyaltie hauing to his owne cost assured mee by
rie daedes his soule to be soly thine, then, rather p-
thy victorie then the conquest for himselfe? And seei-
yet doubtfull, I will cherish my selfe till I know it, a-
ding it so, not that I loued him without hope of li-
for the dishonor I did thereby commit against my pu-
will vpon my life execute the cruellest death y ere th-
was guiltie of in recompence of my rash foolishnes,
fection so ill repaied. So somewhat quieted she coul-
continue long, remembryng what the Lady had tou-
whereuppon a little to prorogue her griefes, shee tu-
voice with this Dittie, to her Lute with a more mel-
harmonie, than Mercury did sound whē Iupiter did se-
to bewitch with musick the hundred eyes of watchin-
charge.

The second Booke of the

kindled wroth was our amorous Char-
ing his owne side had the worst of that
ned he a new pollicie that altogether
the louer of Venus, Vulcans competitor
shewe to let him goe, that hee might
were effected, for the Nyquean seeing the
aduantage, loosed him: but scarcely had
the strength of his legges he set spurs
and taking hold of him with greater
he snatcht him from his saddle bearing
the griued Iudge Oristoldo, who the
iudged the Prince of Nyquea vanquish
I le not accept him (sayd Rosabell) but
soules friend.

Let it suffice sir Knight (replied Lin-
quered me in the battle of swordes, & a
coquest other wise, by bearing away the
ly courtesie, which though it be due vnto
so slightly let it goe: but seeing I am by
maunde me according to our agreement
it. The first that I intreate (not comm-
ceau me as a friend which I will trust
meest passage of my breath. And the next
still to loue your Lady with the firmene
ble hart: for there is no Lyon so fierce
with the good done him. But this will
without preiudice to the Greeke Emper
it will be rather an impouerishing then
honour. And in signe that you doe so
shewe it in prohibiting any whatsoeuer
with such an vnjust demaunde.

Moreouer, if for the gayning of you
neede of our companieit, and our perso
soorth to be by you ymployed, the which
by deedes, then we speake it in wordes
Knight (replied the Prince of Nyquea

of the third Part

Champion on fier, think
f that wassing. So saye
her sufficiently contented
etito? which was, he made
ght doe the like, his hopes
ing that way he got a litle
ly had he done it, whē with
urres to his fierie Courser,
eater strength then before,
aring him in his armes to
o the ioyfullest aliue, ad
nquished. Under y tittle,
ll) but as a deare and my

o Lindoriano) to haue con
es, & not to require a more
ay the trophies of knight
ie vnto you, yet wil I not
am by you vanquishd, cō
ement for I wil performe
ommand) is that you re
l truckly be vnto the extre
he next that you continue
menesse of an immouer
fierce but will be moued
is will I haue performed
Emperour, for otherwyse
then enriching of your
doe so, I must haue you
soeuer that you shal morte

of your loue there is any
a persons wee offer hence
e which we will better doe
pordes. Magnanimous
Nyquea) I am exceeding
glad

of the Mirrou

glad that since this chance
by your handes being a
vertues, and so I thinke
most befitted myne honour
doe, I promise by the sayth
Prince to accomplish it: (I
y cost of som ones life as the
aduentures befell this Prin
notable,) and that fully I n
beseech you tell me whome
countrie, that if we should
vs. At this time onely are
tune: And this (sayd Rosabe
these many dayes hath happ
their leaues & parted, the t
to Grecia in which nauigati
tures that the wise man he
griues me, for so famous a
tors armes, wherewith he di
vnto the fight, and Orifoldo
not onely distinctly be set do
zed in a sole Historie. We re
nales, where Rosabells life i

There may these aduentu
is onely sayd that w the be
landed in the Port of Hircan
of the Grecian Empire, wh
with Allirios companie, and
strang Nations there arriued
they supposed some generall
ued, vntill they were certifi
ces great contentment, spe
deare Fathers were in Gre

In this manner mounted
the earth affoorded, surpassin

The second Booke of the third Part

*Perswaded still maye be,
My soule and pensiue hart,
That If I liue in smart:
It is by louing thee.*

*His life was neuer sweete,
That euer learnt to loue,
Unlesse his minde did meete,
With what his Loue did moue.*

*There doth he strise to liue,
Both with his sou'e and hart,
That If he die with smart,
His death his loue might giue.*

*The acte that most is praised,
And worthie of most renoune:
Is, I, Loues heauenly crowne,
That makes dishaire amazed:*

*Which when it shall assure:
The soule and amorous harte,
Then is a life no smart:
To Loue if it indure.*

With so short a winded, hay me ended the warrellicke Dame, that the Princesse which ouer hard it could not but greatly pittie her, hauing begun to tread the inextricable maze of Loue, not a little wondring to see how general that passion was where with they cheefely liued. So afflicted remained the beautilous Sarmacia, that she could passe no farther, giuing occasion to the Brother and Sister (their beuers closed because they would not be knowne to go to her) and the Ladie (being naturally moze tender) to the other said What haue you felt (Sir Knight) to expresse parte of your hearts aboundance to the aire, and part to these harde and sencelesse Dakes, which is but to increase your smart, the which, if in any thing we may diminish, we will effectually accomplish it.

At the noise did the Ladye start, for being drownded in
imagi

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

imagination, shee did not remember her selfe, and hauing her thoughts dispersed abroad, had giuen no care to the pynesse wordes: and so seeing those knightes in that place shee said: Greatly may you fauour me (Sir Knight) to leaue me to my solitude: for that onely hath the power to ease my paine, and strengthen my mynde to suffer it, add greater, if greater may be imagined. And this I intreat, vlesse any necessitie requires my person, which I will vse most willingly in either of your behalves.


Braue Knight (replyed Floraliza) the sight of your present itate so penetrated our harts, that it caused this Knight and my selfe to come and demaund the reason of it: offering our persons at your neede, I doe highly esteeme your offer, renowned Knight (answered Sarmacia) which could not proceede but from you. But my infirmitie is of such condition, that the remedie on your partes will augment it, and for mee to relate it, were a grieve past grieve, and a newe kinde of torment: for I haue no leaue to publish it to any, (much more to you) because it will but serue to refresh the memorie of passed griefes and present evils. And therefore, I praye you either to goe from mee, or giue me leaue, that I may doe it: for the verie sight of companie is to mee troublesome.

I neuer sawe a Knight (saide Floraliza) so deeply possess'd with Loue, but would delight to communicate his paynes and ioyes: for the one he mitigates by communication, and the other he encreaseth by relation. And so I thinke you are a Souice in Loue, seeing you knowe not, there is no grieve how great so euer, but will by company be asswaged. Rather (replyed the Lacedemon Ladye) this proues you a fresh Scholler in Cupids schoole, seeing you ignorant what wrong is offered to the Ladye loued, publishing her secretes: for to imagine them is secreete treason, committed against her. And nowe I saye, I woulde not keepe companie with a Knight that so quickly desires to blabbe the thoughtes cloased in an amorous soule,

third Part

the the blad vnable to
star: ftyding downe the
cartso heauily that thee
afunder. She fell
and with y weyght
s on the earth.

When (worthy with
Florned Sarmacias ry
one after the other,

embled therewith,
horse cropper, thee
with her Steede,
more force then nee
her then she would,
ad like to fall which

youwne to the ground.

out non Ladye arrived

mon had she met her the

larger: For not mee

chav dle deuiding it, &

they ce with the sight of

oppo hie valour, in no

man ompt him, that se

nitie horse necke follow

fame he kept thither, &

ly de atcht her from the

in ar therby because one

umpld not take forth,

uen dagger from her

they er disgrace feared

foze shee had no other

deter all her strength to

the f her selfe on one scote

their er a thing worthy

place Floralizas dagger,

after shee

of the Mirroure of Knigh

shee drew it out of the sheath and
Alicandros unknowne Peere, yf she ha
with feare seeing her owne weapons
handes: It was no little good fortun
Sarmacia, hauing thereby time to draw
the stirrope, and with hard plucking s
ioynted: which founde to her grieve, f
her enemye she could not treade thereon
cause she had almost fallen on her. Sa
as much as possible she might, expectin
ming: which was not longe, for like a
(seeing that was her first battle, and w
lesse she speedily did finish it she should ge
Sarmacia, and with both handes she layd
and so quicke that breathlesse shee ha
her, and yet she haughtlie defended h
king Floralindas daughter rest on the g
handes and fete, till the paine of her foo
then she seemed but newly to begyn th
ligeritie wherewith shee entred and sal
ration.

With a flourish they crossed aloft the
procuring that way to conclude their wa
not long, for Alicandros Peere, thrust
more inwards, stepping in with her r
imagined swiftnes she gaue her a ven
taking her vnder the skirt it wounded
on the thigh. It was no newe matt
to receaue such blowes, it made her lo
and like a rauenous Vulture did shee
sight of her owne blood.

Nowe seeke they no flyght no ward
to defende and offend, but onely com
of their Lyfe or Death to the strengt
and with the vttermost force that Sarm

Knighthood.

and with it hadd slaine
she had not kept away
pongs in her aduersaries
fortune, for the valerous
drazwe her foote out of
king shee had almost dis-
iefe, for going to follow
hereon, which was the
r. She dissembling yt
ecting her enemies com-
like a chaffed Lyonelle
nd what little honoz vn-
uld get) she flung against
e layde on her so thicke,
ee hadde almost tyred
ed her selfe, often ma-
the grounde both wyth
er foote was paste, and
on the combate, for the
nd salyed deserued admi-

t their putting swordes
eir warre: But it lasted
hustling her somewhat
her right foote, and with
uenturous blowe, for
unded her though little
matter for the Ladye,
er loose her patience,
shee become with the

warde, nor no agilitie
committe the hazarde
length of their armes,
Sarmacia hadd posselt
with

ke of the of third Part

imagined, and not made common to
euerie a louer woulde you make gy:
or euerie loue tale? Oh that I knew
she should not longer liue deceaued
I thinke she doth not, yf this be not
eake moze then befits you (said the
h moze bouldnesse then you should,
& well meaning speeches did cause,
Sarmacia) the truest testimony that
titude, and not the vaunting beasts
monly bragge of. And seing this
t about, restore me the honour I did
e degree of a good Knight, attribu-
eming merits: and when you haue
you wil, for I giue you leaue. What
ngry Ladie) is to let you vnderstand
e committed, which is greater then
f. Then stay (replied Oristides Lady)
hell I can shew the one, when the o:
and so leaping on her light horse, hee
ing her to mortall battle.

e woulde not the Macedonian Prin:
r brother, much moze with whom she
allenge her. Oh Appollo the desire
te made thee hasten Auroras splendor
cause without thy ptesence none could
tie deedes: or was it, because for
loue thou wouldest surfeite on this

why doest thou not dippe my dull
of thy Diuinitie, for if they
this and my tongue must memo:
ason thy liberall influence to impart
whole wozldes beautie is here like

There

of the Mirrour of Knight

There was left no Cittie in the first Heau:
habitations, onely to be spectators, of so
uery of them would willingly lose their li:
ned by such beautie. They met by the swif:
ble Coursers in such manner, that the str:
counters made the Brother shrink at the v:
happened between the Ladies most gallan:
other: & their meetings serued but in shew
launces thzough the emptie ayre to Phabu:
on. At once dzeue they the two admirab:
of Camilla, and the second of Pyrrhus by s:
Oristides, who gaue it to his deare Sarmac:
as the president booke reported. With the:
together did they ground them on their he:
alike assured of the others strength, for th:
fortitude and beautie in euerie respect equ:
began one of the fiercest battailes that the
corde, for being Ladies increasing in w:
were able to dissolue a Roke: But such
armours, that it assured them from all p:
lesse with such furious strength they layd
that the flesh moze fairer then Venus in h:
mangled. The desperate Sarmacia gaue
a dangerous blow a little belowe her Be:
small effect, for it made her bend her hea:
maine. She would not omit the adua:
like to this there happens none, and so h:
layd on the circuite of her helme, that
all feeling, made her blood run thzough h:
losing the guiding of her horse, which so:
bout the fiede a good while, till, recou:
rage that with furie ioynded to settle her
saddle is not set downe) for casting her
her faire backe, she let slie at her helme
that had she carried her arme stiffe, tha

W

nighthood.

Heauen to guard their
of so rich a fight, for e
their liues, to bee wound
the swiftnes of their nime
the strength of their in
at the viclewe. No harme
gallantly passing by ech
in shœuers to sende their
Phabus middle Mantis
mirable swords the one
by succession. Come to
armacia in Lacedemon,
ith them hoysted on high
their helms, resting either
for the Heauens had in
at equald them. They
at the world did euer re
in wꝛath, their blowes
t such were their strong
all perils. Neuerthe
layd vppon each other,
in her chiefe pride, they
gaue her gallant enemie
r Beuer: it was to no
r head below her Horse
aduantage, for seldome
so with both hands she
hat shee struck her from
gh her visor and mouth,
th sencelesse bare her a
couering her selfe, (the
her firmly againe in her
her Romaine shielde at
me with such strength,
that blow had termina
ted

with
uerse
her ha
anothe
should
and m
mon
she res
her rig
her son
with a
pens
games
the fal
ing to
foyle:
ground
found
macia

Th
front
pon he
ken fr
all she
y this
thus co
themse
alingh
lacing
pale li
her lye
went t
polver
a Lady
red: 2
the ren

18871

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

his inchaunted habitation, and seeing her greatly to resemble Alphebos daughter, no feare was equall vnto his, thinking they were dead. The which straight vanished, for beginning to stir, they shewed happy newes of their liues. He would not so leaue them, for it might be occasion of new quarrels, and so taking his Sister before him, (because hee would not leaue so valiant a Lady without a horse) hee carried her within the Forrest to see if he could finde any place where shee might haue the rootes of her hayre cured on her head. For else, woundes had she none because her armour did defend it. And meeting with no place they were faine to alight there, bringing water from a cleare springe (whose current that way ran into the Sea, paying his Tribute to the Ocean) he cast it on her face, till she recovered her senses: And seeing her selfe in that manner shee thought shee had been by her aduersarie vanquishd.

The consideration of the caused grieffe through these imaginatiōs, I leaue to you kind Ladies to suppose: the which because I haue so much to doe, onely wandering but vnder y^e shadowe of your fauours, I doe not explicate. No lesse was the valerous Sarmacias: who not able there to remedie it, she rose and mounted on her Courser, determined to take her next way to the Cittie, because the next daye the Tryumphes there began, whose aduentures doe not imerited require a newe Chapter.

CHAP. IX.

How the Tryumphes began in *Constantinople*, the wonders that in the Iustes did happen.

Come is the day (most beauteous Pymphes of the chaste Goddess) so celebrated throughout the world, when y^e Christians with prayles, and the Pagans with superstitious ceremonies doe solemnize the Nativitie of the glorious St. Iohn Baptist, on which the famous Tryumphs were begun,

ted the
penetr
same f
though
with h
of the
H
admir
sing, s
with s
calking
would
but wi
ded, fo
that it
to pre
It wa
with a
could n
ting he
the ho
this bl
leste re
ing hin
ing the
calking
saddle,
foote hu
shee so
backe.
Her
a sudd
remedi
draue
she did
her bea

of Knighthood.

allant disposition, brandishing
es, and coming to the thea-
e said. Deuine Ladies these
your be halfe mantaine these
difficult, none dares enter the
your sauozable licence. With
ea. Were it (Sir Knight)
your haughty chivalries you
requested there to by all these
o loose much and aduventure
ur Princesse Oliuia (said the
h assurace undertake a moze
at his proper valour doeth
nt Rosluera) letts not delaie
e befall them, they attribute
eason haue you in it (said the
e knight maye you begin to
noweth of your high persons
pummel bended the Persian,
night sound, which Ecchoed
ery one was amazed.
the Troian was the first that
ed none to make him game,
wards proposed which were
inst him came the mighty
antest in the kingdome, but
who swifter the imaginati-
counter the Troian lost his
whereat the people shouted
Pert came forth those two
nd Rodaseo, with whom he
they measured their lengths
Jussed were not of name,
at in short time he ouer-

When y two strong brothers
of

The sccond Booke of the of third

begunne with the noise of so manye millions
instruments, as if the Citie were at the point
Nothing was heard nor seen but what apert
tiall discipline, nor through y^e citie no vesture a
might be seen before their Princes. Euery
adorned themselves as well in seruants liueries
own persons. Round about the place where y^e
be made were set great & bigge pillars, with fi
steele, that the battles might better be deserved
were painted all the haughtie deeds & chival
Greeke Princes, with so naturall & lively coul
wanted nothing but speaking. At this time c
pero from his pallace wth such maiestie as he c
on earth: For their horses, coches, chariots an
were numberlesse. In one y^e was drawen with
Unicornes, road three Ladies, whose beautie
shepherds brightnesse, that for loue left the
heauen. They were the most excellēt Princess
Olivia, & Roseluera, with the faire Artemisa Prin
lād, that more deuine then a humane creature
resplēding miro^r of beautie, & fortitude, Archi
of Lyra, would not y^e scene but on horseback, v
zons with so rich imboderie of stones & pearls
her excellencies could be deserved through the
ting rayes. By the bydle was she lead by t
Alphebo knight of the Sunne, & his mother, t
per hand accompanied her, did Sacridoro lead,
these feasts had sent for his deere wife Orisilua
company of Lindaraza & Archirofa of Portugall
wth Don Siluerio was arriued. All these were att
vestures, cut vpon Greene, wth diuersitie of cur
More excellencie of perfect beautie & gallantne
worlds vast territories behold. The three Pri
Roseluera and Artemisa, were clad in greene
dord ouer with whit roses sett with infenitt st
mable ballour. The Emperesse Clarideana ca

of Knighthood.

hels shining like the sunne. In
ued they vnto y^e proud stupen-
ht was built, & round about
lt set by.

ences it was Metamorphized
white Chrystall Heauen with
ndows, y^e chalēgers pauilliō
like roses the Ladies woare,
ny thing in y^e place. Througħ
all ensigne with twelue thou-
nd set it on y^e paullions top,
as if that were y^e generall ses-
the ships & Gallies anchoꝛde
y thousand pieces of dischar-
e place was something quies-
of it the couragious Trojan
nation, & an 100 godfathers
them his battel in Lacedemō
ousnesse ioyed the sight to be-
a rose colour armour, grauen
o. In the middle of his shield
aked sworde, and he shew-
t stryke there, but thce ag-
his note: and no sound
hart, and whē he comēd
ound receiued, and he
ad deserved. And so
ous Prince of Fraunce Cla-
Artemisa would needs shew
companied him: for all his
eede of Moses which his La-
h such Arte interlaced, that
his godfathers were in like
maiestie, that it seemed no
one came there, who ap-
at nothing was in them seen
but

The second Booke of the third Part

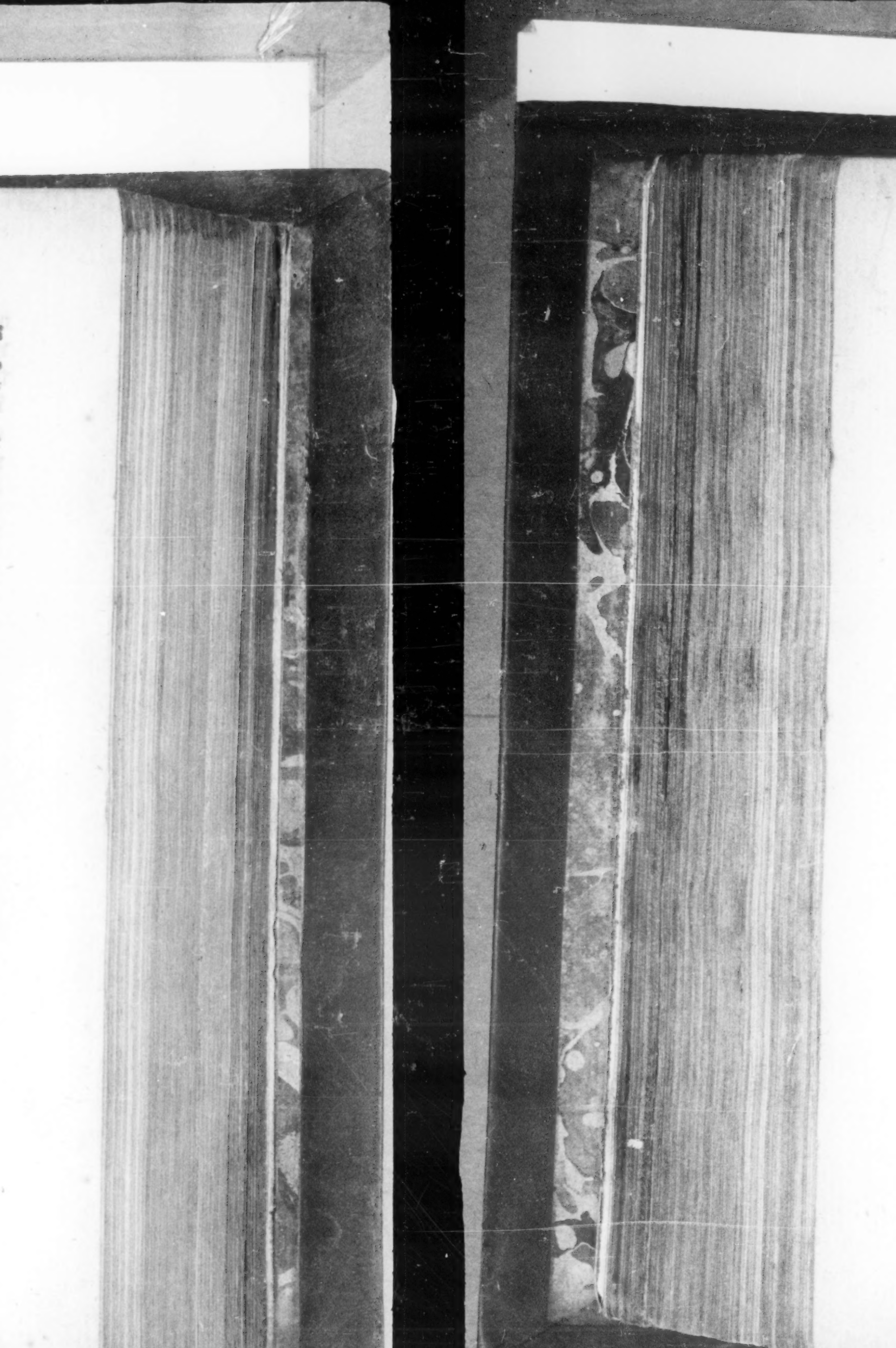
of Spaine presented them selues within the place, wherein was hard a great rumour because the Spanyards were reputed of high valour the which entring y^e lists first incountred with the Troian that both lost their stirrops. At the seconde carrier, which was wth more furie breaking their launces in many peeces, they met with horses, shieldes, and Helmes so furiously, that the Spanyards horse tumbled on the ground with his Maister, and the Troian by the force of the blowe lost both his stirrops, and was so shaken, that not fynding on what to staye his legges, he also came to the ground. Great was the noise that in the place was made, and greater the ioy, that the Ladies conceiued, seeing how well their Knightes performed it. Whereupon the Quene of Lyra tooke occasion thus: It is well scene (faire Ladies) how your fauours worke, seeing how well the challengers thereby maintaines their credits. It was giuen so willingly (replied Rosalura) that I maruell not at it. This talke was broken off by the coming forth of y^e haughtie Frenchman vpon a mighty Gennet, who with such furie met with the other Spanyard, that he threw him from his saddle, himselfe loosing his stirrops & his raynes, holding by the horse necke for feare of falling. If this incounter gladded the Princeesse you neede not doubt since she loued him: For the louer alwayes wishes the thing loued as much good as to it selfe.

To him intred Lireamandro and Bariandell. Euery one iudged they would winne the tent, & prizes, for Lireamandro incountering with the frenchman so strongly, they made their encounters that the aduenturer lost his saddle, and the challenger passe forwarde so amazedly that he knew not where he was he had scarce returned when Bariandell presented himselfe before him, and with Mars his puissance they met, y^e Frenchman lost his saddle falling vpon y^e horse backe euer y^e hinder saddle bow, & not by his valour did he recouer it againe but through y^e which proceeded from the galant English lady who wth a new fauor fauored her lover.

The

The con
legges, w
and draw
with.

I desire
newe quar
tenteth me
and so may
be (said the
controuers
banquished
was so grea
smoke that
dour of the
course stood
Ladies can
man behau
treated him
did. For bet
fathers. Wh
tenting the
continue to
yet found the
ming themse
the listes wi
great Patro
In faith (bra
ponder knig
to your beaut
nelle (replyed
ponder knig
sittedst youth
Lady vsed hi
almost shee co
nate & pensati
And seeing y



The second Booke of the third Part

but great gréene Emeraldes with wonderfull art sett in the hard paste of the tempered Steele on his shield was portrayed the Image of sayth with this inscription.

*This onely may deserue,
Loues recompence in th'end:
Though I no more contend.*

Well did the English dame vnderstand the poesie, greatly reioycing it was directed to her beautie, for shee disoained not her louers affection, especiall beeing so great a Prince. Euery one applauded this deuise, and chiefly her Parents were not a little glad knowing the intent. Wherefore the gallant Portuguese could not but say, I am sure (sweet Lindaraza) that yf you woulde yeelde the fauour, this knight would not rest sorrowfull. So contented was his Mother, that she could not denie him any thing she might, hauing a Sonne so faire & valiant. The wise that was heard brake of euery ones conuersation, for the free Persian, with the mightines of his Persians, would needs make more shewe thereof, then of a louer. For Cupid thitherto had forgotten him, he entred with a Hundred pages in Red and Russet, with many knots of goulden twists, of like liurie 2000 attended on him, who at the ceasing of the instrumentes proclaimed Persia and Grecia. With this traine hee entred the place, and letting fall a certaine deuise in maner of a Clowde, he seemed of a burning flame of fire, till the substance that caused it, was consumed, then did hee appeare one of the gallantest knights of the vniuerse: he was not so bigge as his Father but of equall forces, armour were of colour like to his Pages, with many Roses of gold about them: in y middle of his shield was portrayed a starry Heauen, and in midst of it, himselfe looking at it, with this poesie at his fecte.

*None can neuer perish,
Though most he should desier:
From whence his hope retire.*

The second Booke

I am glad (soueraigne Queene) that you haue graunted what my Lady mother desired, that I should haue a small comfort to those that pynne in the heart, is not in the gallants, but some in the ladies, in honours or disgrace. It is not so for the Queene) as it is iust towards the ladies, that in consideration place their hopes, and in the least cause of dispaire. And then which Ladies ought to be gratified, that they should leaue their louer hopelesse, that they should receiue, seeing their faith, loue, and service, so ought their complaints to be pittyed, for our strangeness at first diswaied, and then ragious Prince) if any Ladye should be so hard on you, then all we on the Prince our disfauours proceeds from this: that we should haue the strength to aunswere her, so that we should not shewe him no hope of fauour, but we should be in his chamber, and uttering a thousand curses vpon his bed, cursing his father, and his selfe against his content. He durst not do this, he knewe his mother would send him, and he placed himselfe next to Omea, that he might be there, & this was at such time, as there were three Knights armed in Russet, with helmes, and one enuyed their disposition, but they were bound to their deuises, that it was not their fault, and they knewed them to know they liued vnder the cause thereof, but the losse of their liues, these were the valiant Princes of France, when their leaues of Rosabeil tooke them, and they were caried away, & they looking

*For such a famous
Still may we burne
Equall to our desire*

ooke of the third Part

Queene of Lyra) that you haue
 nother hath noted, which is no
 pyne, to knowe that all the fault
 some also in their Ladies disfa-
 not so great (replied the sharpe
 rds. those knightes, that without
 opes, on that which yeeldeth so
 then this is rather a fauour so
 gratified, when so plainly they
 that after they call it not a de-
 ue, and loyaltie so ill repaide, and
 to be pittied and excused, had not
 waded them. Wherefore (con-
 adye hath had more power ouer
 ince of Percia, thinke that your
 this: The wofull louer had not
 er, seeing how open y she would
 fauour. From thence he went to
 a thousand exclaims he cast him
 his fortune that so was oppo-
 he durst not tarrie long, because
 he send for him, so he returned &
 uea, that loued him as her selfe,
 as through the place entred two
 with barres of black, that enery
 n, but seeing they loued, & accor-
 it was in some high place, it grieved
 ed vnbeloued. Yet that was not
 losse of their deare Ladies: For
 nces of Celandia, that hauing tar-
 l tooke their way towards Gre-
 rie Chariot, wherein their Ladies
 looking after them w this Motto:
 famous losse,
 e burne in fire,
 or desire.

of the Mirrour of Knighthood

With great grace they passed forwarde
 strength was not so great as y Persians, wh
 lance, incountred the one so rigorously, tha
 feete he made him touch the ground, he lon h
 fewe blowes like that he had receiued and pa
 Against him settled himselfe the elder brother
 was of more strength, and so with more mig
 tred, shiuering their Launces in a thousand
 aduenturer lost one stirrope, yet was it so
 With new Launces they returned, but in th
 rier, the Celandian got but little, for his
 earth he left with the fall. The Persian lost
 the horse with the force of the incounter st
 tockes on the ground: but spurring him,
 passe forwards prauising as he went. Th
 began their accustomed Musick, with such
 it seemed sent from heauen. The Galleys d
 ordinance with such noyes, that y reboundin
 all the Citie quake.

What say you now (deare Lady) saide Ro
 knights high deedes? I beleue our fauours
 lingly, is that which so animates them? R
 spoken (said the Queene of Lyra) but in the
 the freeness of his hart, this knight deserued
 fest a fauour. She spake it, to let Claridiano v
 she desired to haue him Ioust: but not seeing
 straight supposed that her sharpe aunswere h
 thence. It grieved her, for shee loued him de
 selfe: But her grauntie was so great, that sh
 meanes haue him imagine any such thing of
 dissemble were to loue, this Lady may be eter
 mous louer, and the greatest that euer was.
 time there entred some to proue themselues a
 shan, to their cost: for in short space he ouerth
 knights. None durst enter within the listes
 little there was to be got. So that towardea

Second Booke of the third Part

ince of Nyquea which was he y^e Iusted, who
of y^e Tryumphs ordained in Grecia, came thi
rted from Rosabell Prince of Great Britanie,
eince of Rosilura to whom in Timacria he had
le, he there arrived winning eternall hono
which seemed most hardest, for that the va
though his leggs were lockt, was forced to y^e
the greatest clamours that euer yet the be
The challengers left their pavillion, though
ir wills. But the haughtie louer went to

u (Heroyick Knights) to returne vnto your
shall esteeme it a high and vnderferued fauor
as your companion & friend. Braue knight
armies that we haue tryed (sayd the cour
Persia) since it hath pleased the gyddie blind
of chaunce to shew her mutabilities on vs,
erwise, but that you enioy the merits of
ich considered well, all this and farre much
e. Wee did maintaine the beautie, & gals
reeke Dames, now hauing banquishd vs,
e condicions of the Iustes. In a matter
ought to acknowledge (answered the gals
there resteth nothing more then to profes
nce it must bee done with the Ladies cons
here is no more but to craue it. Whereup
the heauenly windowes where they were
s Beuer shewing the admiration of hys
g his humble duetie.

nd deatne Ladies, although my pretended
then audacious, yet trusting more to the
ntie of your courtesie then any valour of
eeding from you, I beseech that since these
oured in your seruices, you will bee pleas
e title to suffer me to proceede forward. All
ence, astonished at the Knights request.
But

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

But the great Emperour Trebatio that was not far of, said. It is both honorable and iust what this knight intreateth, and therefore shall it be graunted him. We haue seen how little our fauours haue pruailed (replied the free Rosilucra,) and therefore we would not haue him loose with the what he hath without them won: but since your Maiestie will haue it so, there is none here that will gaine say it. Pleased rested euery one with the Ladies answere, but specially the Nyquean, that on her all the while did gaze, thinking that he saw his Mistres, whome she did highly resemble, as lowe as his knee he bowed his head in signe of thankfulness for y^e exceeding fauor, returning vnto the listes, where it was pitie to see how he vsed the knights, for he gaue no encounter, which was not eyther of Death, or of a mortall wound. Already would Apollo end his course beginning it with our Antipodes, when through the place there entred a knight in purple armour with many red Roses of fine orient rubies which admirably shewed, no lesse did he himselfe. In his shield was portrayed the picture of libertie, placed vpon a world, and a knight that gaue her his hand, saying.

*None this way may arriue,
Except his hart be free:
Of loues sweete tyrannie.*

Fewe Ladies there, but desired the knights ouerthrow, for thinking there was no pleasure and content where loue reigned, with this desire they stayed, for euery one iudged y^e Justes would be admirable: so thought the Emperour Alphebo, for the disposition of the knight was no lesse then of the newe maintayner. Euery one called him so, knowing what he had required of the Ladies. Who iudging his aduersarie of great valour, with his owne hand choosed a bigg launce. Seeing him doe so, the Princesse Oliuia sayd, I beleeue that according to the will wherewith our knight chooseth his launce, he meaneth no good towarde the aduentu-

The second Booke of the third Part

four, through y^e place past two Knights of good semblance, cladd in yallow, that no small laughter caused the Ladies to see their dispayning deuise on their sheeldes had they a thousand distrustes all making against them: & they there pictured with this inscription.

*Tis a vertue to distrust:
To him that will not Loue:
For feare of Ioyes remoue.*

The *Motto* the ladies entertained as was their custome, when therein they will shewe their disdain equall to the cruelty that they shew vnto their gallants. The one of the yellow knights sett him selfe right against the couragious Persian, who with his incountre laide him on the grounde, the like he did by y^e second, resting so brused by their strokes that he could scarce keepe a horse backe for those were the strongest incounters he had all that daie receaued. The knights abashed returned the waye they came leauing the place merrie, for the Ladies alowd did saie. Wel befall so amorous knights, for it is Just that such as they do loose their right to make the Ladies sport. In this manner iested they when through one side of the place appeared a knight, of haughtie disposition, for besides the riches of his armour, his gallant behauiour and braue constitution, all the beholders admyred his armes were tawny of colour with many Greene Emeraldes that they seemed there to growe, all the Joynts were of a siluer colour, and euery one Iudged him of valour, on his sheeld in a tawny field was figured y^e picture of a Ladie whose beauty drew all eyes vnto her. Before her stood a knight y^e gaue her his hart, with this *motto*.

*The Ladie being so faire,
Why do I compt it smart:
When that my pensine heart:
Will kissing greefe out dare.*

18871
of the Mirrour of Knigh

It is not credible how the comming
turer pleased, who giuing his horse the
swiftly passe euen to the Ladies Theate
made him bend his head betwene his l
bowed his own lower then his saddle p
manner, that no hart could moze desire.
the Ladies shew him, resting verie fea
winne the prizes: With fresh horse issu
on the couragious Persian, and depart
other, in y^e midst of their carrier they met
then euer Mars was maister of. The adu
of a Magicke temper, & therefore was t
nothing seene, but that which he gaue th
such, that piercing his shield & armes, w
he thrust him so hard, that he cast him bel
plucking the Launce to him, with the sur
elected himselfe, which was the cause (t
he went to the ground. Great was the r
with the sight of the aduenturers bzaue b
a furious Lyon, the iniured French man
assured to reuenge his friend, which issu
he thought: for the Talunie Knight in po
And so ending their course within their S
mightie was the incounter that the French
horse with his Helme broken, tumbled to
adventurer in the beginning seeing his ste
like to fall, verie nimbly leapt from him,
ted with like ligeritie remounted on his b
(said the Emperesse Claridiana) what valor
der knight, beleue me not, if the prizes are
I thinke no lesse (replied the gallant Merid
her satt: for in the managing of his cou
scene a moze bzaue knight.

From this talke were they driuen by the
of Troylus Nephew, whose incounter was
for ouer along the saddle it layde the head

cond Booke of the third Part

all the strength that he possesse made against
 countering with such furious blows, that the
 might not him selfe secure. None seemed to
 r, for the mighty stroake had summoned all the
 fearefull trembling hart. Two well fur-
 et not with such horroz as did the warriors:
 their launces without farther motion, they gal-
 each other, the like did they by the second: but
 ther of them wearie of delay, with more fu-
 Bulles, they mette in middell of the place.
 ers blowe was venturous, and that which
 ictozie, which otherwise more deerer it had
 e chanced on the others visor, which though
 gerous, yet did it cause that the others was
 t haue been. Notwithstanding, they met
 ds and helmes that their horses iogging on
 maintayners fell downe dead, and as hee was
 hauing receaued no hurtfull blow, ere he fell
 aside from him, falling on his handes so a-
 fecte he knewe not where he was, more be-
 grated Astorildo of Callidonia, that in search
 of amond did goe, as is afore mentioned, who
 se through the paine of his forehead. Such
 curs of Instruments and people was heard,
 ve what the other sayde. Sorrowfull depar-
 of Callidonia thinking that the unlucky blow
 loose the Just. Little stayed the maintayner
 Ladies sent him twentie Pages with so ma-
 ely furnished, and a messuage that a weake
 would haue become more fierce then a hun-
 one sayde. The Greeke Princesses (braue
 ds the to you, intreating you since you labo-
 you would accept these horses, which you
 requiring more, seing your valour & deedes
 it. Good page tell those Ladies that on this
 you (replied the Prince) that it well seemes
 they

of the Mirrour of

they will attribute the good for
 their beauties, which seing they
 umph in their owne wishes, and
 loose my life, and a thousand, if
 they were about to sound when i
 Knight of bodie bigge and great,
 med in greene armour with man
 his on shield there was an imper
 freshly bleeded, with this Motto.

*Her bea
 Though
 And mon*

There few knights were there
 wise knew for what the knight ca-
 quea did not ignoze it, for remem-
 sed Rosabell, seing him approach
 his demaunde left his pavillion,
 the other being there come listning
 that euery one might heare. Calli-
 batio, for among so many no man
 am hee sir knight (replied the C
 what you require? For what I
 wil gretly grieue thee, for only th
 ther fro far countries, which I n
 knowest how thou hast wronged
 nacie, the which being so notori
 stay, but fetch thy armor, for he
 battle I desie thee. Truly knight
 the Emperour) for thy demaun-
 rie, verie much, not to refuse t
 straight bee perfourmed) but b
 pleasures. He that hath so ma
 proude Pagan) ought with fear
 Besore him stepte the most
 what praying lycense of the C

our of Knighthood.

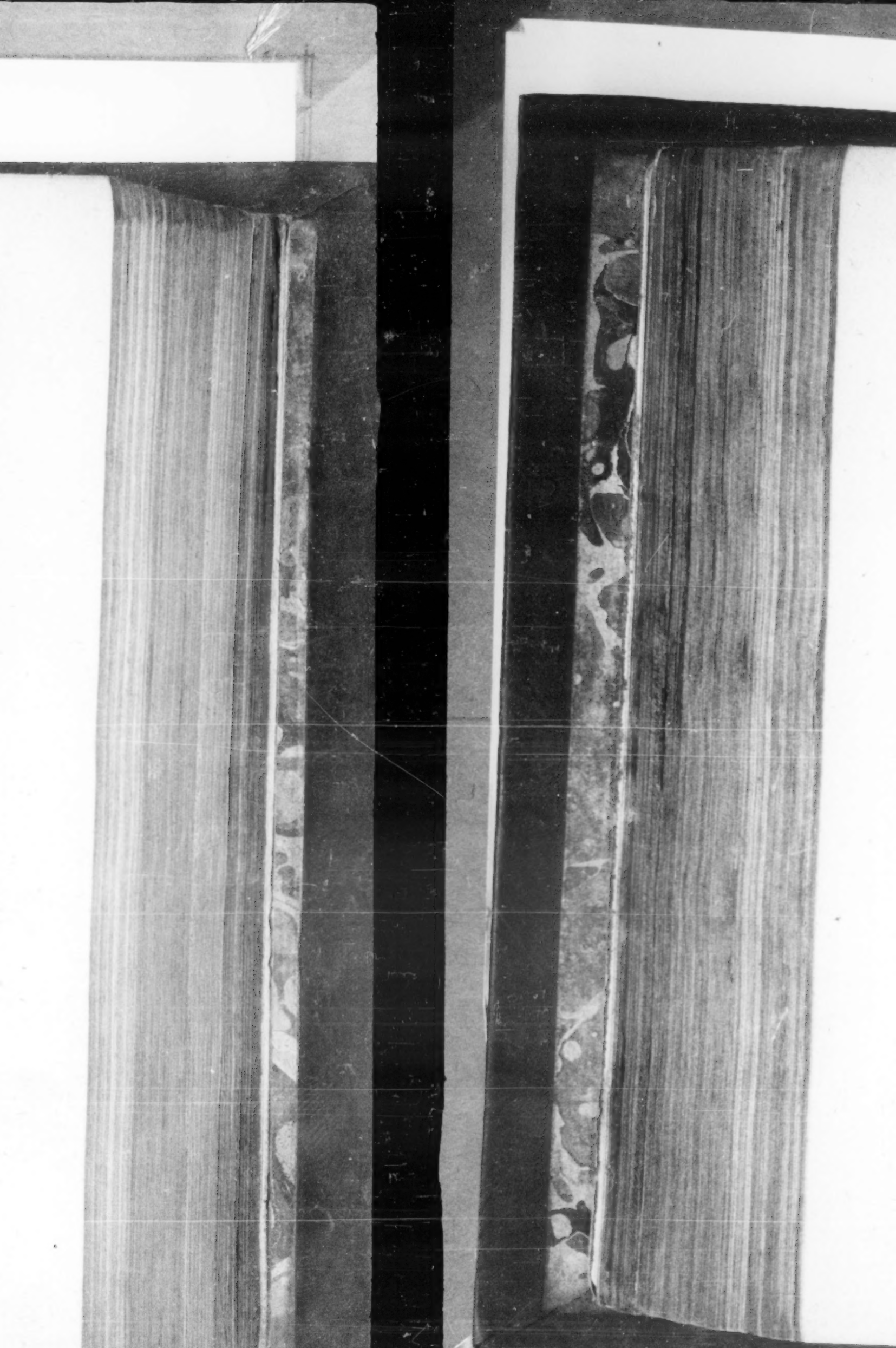
good fortune of the Justes onely to
ing they deserue, so they may trye
es, and that it may bee so, I will
and, if so many I had. A retraite
when in the place there entred a
great, and well proportioned, ar
h many strawberries about the,
imperiall head cut off, as if it
Motto.

*Ter beauty doth deserue it,
though Mauors head it were:
And more yf it were more deare.*

e there in the place but by the de
ight came. The Prince of Ny
emembryng what he had promi
och vnto the Theater, knowing
llion, and went thither. And
lifting vp his Beuer demaunded
Who is here the Empero? Tri
o. maruell if I know him not? I
the Empero? therefore saye on
at I come, (Empero?) I am sure
ly thy head hath brought me hi
I must haue, because thou wel
nged Garrofilea Quene of Ty
otozious, thou hast no more to
here in her behalfe to mortall
ight thou sayest well (answered
maunde doth grieue me, and be
use the battaile, (for that shall
it because it is in time of such
many enemies (replied the
feare to looke for none other.
moite couragious Lyndoriano,
e Emperour, and obtayned,
turned

18871
of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

strucke him al along vpon the belly, y it caused him extreme paine. With moze rauening fury turnes not y raging Wygre vpo his foe the now did Lindoriano, for casting his shield at his back, with both hāds he discharged a blow on his aduersaries y frō the top quite asunder it was cleft, cutting away a great pēce of his skirt he would close w him, & with like desire did y Pagan w his spurs animate his horse, & in such maner met y all foure tumbled to y ground, yet had they not fallen whē they rose on foot, eyther setting aside all feare that for such a battle was unfit. With fresh bzeath entred y Moore, & crossing aloft his sword moze quicker then imagination, he thrust him with a point so strongly, that a little he droue him from him, yet not so much but he could reach him with a counterbuste vpo the knee that it fetcht blod, tremble did the blowe make him, but abandoning all feare, as also of his life, hee reclosed with him, & as his sword had no fault, he laid on his left shoulder, & sliding frō thence, it cut away al his elbow armoz with his male sxeue drawing much blod. Quick was y youth & so wold he second it, but t was to his cost, for y More was skilfull, & letting him enter, he kept aside, laying vpon his shield y tormenting his arme he was glad to let it fall. Oh who hadd at that instant scene y two warriours wout shields, receauing their furious blows without warding. They began with cunning to proceed, for the Pagan as from death shunning the cutting blade, would against it shew his nymblens, so, well firming his leggs, assaulted his enemy, but his stāding did not continue, for the Nyquean entring w both his, droued him from it, yet not so, but y other might giue him so grieuous a stroake, y it made him set his hāds on the earth. This cōtented not y Pagan y w both hands giuing him another (it was a miracle it kild him not outright) for taking him on y waist where y armoz is buckled it cut his skirt, euen to the flesh, and a little moze strengthning his arme that place being the weakest he had slaine him, without paiment wold he goe his waies, but it was not possible, for the Nyquean already inflamed w rage, as he past (desirous to make himselfe amēds) thrust at him with



Part

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

mour vpon his swift light Steed, expecting y^e Emperors com-
 ming, who about Ten of the Clocke yssued from his Roy-
 all pallace, with all those Soueraigne Princesses and La-
 dies, which no lesse seemed then a troope of so many heauen-
 ly Angels, marching on the earth. For those that yester-
 day were seene in greene, this day to assure their gallants
 hopes appeared all in red, and the rest of the Ladies were so
 gorgeously attyzed, with so manye inestimable Jewells a-
 dozned that with reason it might well bee called the Para-
 dice of deuine varieties. The warlike Queene of Lyra came
 all armed, desirous to breake some Launces, and so would
 not mount on the Theater. Her armour was no lesse won-
 derfull, then her beautie adozned with many Carnation flo-
 wers of gold, that so well semed as euery one blest her with
 many millions of benedictions, so did the afflicted Claridia-
 no, that y^e sorrowfullest in the world, did set himselfe where
 none might see him the better to ponder on the imagina-
 rie causes of his grieve, occasioned by her that ouer-ruled his
 desires. There stayed he in silence sighing forth his passi-
 ons, while his Ladie did the like, but her feare was so great
 that it made her forget both her comforts, by not succoring
 y^e distressed amorous youth with a pityfull remedie. There
 was no Ladie in the place but desired a famous victory vn-
 to the Princesses Knight, so was he called by them all, and
 yet not without great and exceeding feare thereof, because
 they saw the Moore at this instant appeare in place with in-
 numerable tokens of incomparable valour, which made ma-
 ny hold the conquest in suspence, not knowing on whether
 to decline. But the Pagan being arriued sayd.

Now knight seing the time for deedes is come, there is
 no reason to delaye it, but in naming of the Iudge. Since
 the one of vs, must of necessitie remaine for euer breathlesse
 in this fielde, that question was needelesse (replied the Ny-
 quean Prince,) neuerthelesse I nominate that Lady, whom
 thou procurest to content with a head so honorable. I had
 not thought thy pride so great (sayd the King of Norwege,)

The second Book

with his point: he could not strike his right thigh, he made him strike his left: he could not giue it with force. They returned as they went, to the admiration of the behoulders, that foure howers continued the combat. Affectionated to the Knight, they comforted selues, and therefore greater was the wayes the thing loued (With the most care. They parted a little space hauing time, began to receive the blowes discharged the duetie of his lance. He wel that battle, and thinking of the death towards the Theater, comforted himselfe with sorrow that the Princesses were not present, that a battle should be fought. How little he had breathed, he was so instant that the other left him not together through the might of his hands, and the other his hands were so nighe that they could not be parted by bodie, pressing them with their hands to earth, where who vpon, and while in a stronge and dangerous combat, nothing gained thereby, for in many places, and so lost much time. It was plainely perceaued, that the Knight for though he was bruised with many blowes of blood. They returned vnto the King, was the maintayners and the spectators begyn a new combat, and angred them all.

The acknowledgment of
but that the other might re-
wearying him with assaul-
sending. The people in t

the Mirroure of Knighthood.

as aboute the skies. But the impatient Moore
against his gods, as thinking that his disgrace
proceeded, went to his enemy, and with both
at him such a blowe, that lighting on the side
he cut away all the buckles of the right side,
he spyed, no doubt but he had made an end of
he recharging there. But he with-held so long
ant Lover recovered himselfe, and with both
marched against his enemy, who in like sorte
and with more horroz then the furious waues
he flintie rockes, they discharged their blowes
helmes with such puissance, that both sencelesse
ound: the Nyquean without his Helme, but
with his head, scull, and bzaynes broken, & scat-
his owne. The people would haue gone to
t the guard stayed them, till they sawe what
e knights fraunce. But straight was the vic-
med: for the valiant Lindoriano, returned and
elfe in that manner, flung to his weapons, to as-
: but seeing him so lye, went to him and vne-
elme, saw his head broken in thzee or foure pie-
ed him, for he was but yong, scarce hauing a-
But seeing he could not doe withall, demaunded
if he had accomplished to his honour. And in
(replied they) most valiant knight, that for
ur memorie here indure. Alreadie came the
and all the Kings that were with him, to re-
ight, who knowing which he was, prostrated
n his knees, requiring his royall handes to
e would not do it, saying: He that hath them
(knight) with more reason ought his to be de-
henours giuen, and rayling him from the
kindly imbraced him, demaunding, who he
yed, excusing himselfe the best that he coude:
or that time he was called Venus knight. The
ould not suffer him to stave in the Tent, but
K. that

The second Booke

but seeing the matter is in this
die, for presenting her with
shalbe assured of the great reward
her service. Answered would
thereby he should too long pursue
their horses, which swifter than
the furie of their full winde
their course breaking in peeces
mounted higher then the raging
pendious strenght were the
no more moued them then
rocks, eyther returned to the
and like rauening Lyons ag
ing forth their glittering blades
ther such blows, & euery one
abundance of blood yssued throug
he thought would be a hinder
the Pagan on the toppe of the
his horse stagger aboute Ten
was there seen a deuouring lion
louer of Rosalaura follow the a
blowes one after another, tha
more scarres then the Fin
best sword of the fiede was t
Artarax the first Souldan of Ny
wyn thre general pitched bat
no blow, but threwe armour,
ground. The better of the fight
nest of his armor defedded his fl
body so tired & brused, that w
win his saddle. The Pagan fea
set hee his spurs to his horse
point, that as he ran with the
him along vpon his saddle, with
w a great knock vnto his brea
celle. Scarce was he thus cast

in selfe from
was his re-
the second
g towarde
proportioned
with fearfull
and ye be re-
that hea-
g towarde
er, raising
cinople Sir
oultres, and
Don Eleno)
est, I haue
and Baby-
man Orilli-
the Bræke
noused they
esse, there
utation ac-
ve strength
ed your de-
line nelwes
Sanguine
rday about
eatest haste
o him was
o aide him,
sharply hee
thstanding,
with his in-
e greatest,
the Sunne
herefoze he
out the Gy-
(For as it
is

The second Booke of the third Part

that he should be cured in court. Where the Emperes Bryana in company of all the Ladies (in recompence of what for the Emperoz he had done) visited him which from death reuiued him, to giue it him more sweeter with their hāds. The Foultes ceased (by the Emperozs commandement) for eyght daies while the knight was in cure, where he was so much made of, as if they knew him in estate to be one of the greatest Princes of the world. So many things happened in these few daies that some of them maye not be omitted: what they were the next Chapter memoꝛateth.

CHAP. XI.

What happened to *Don Eleno of Dacia*, after he departed from the Emperoz, in search of his deare Lady *Rosamond of Callidonia*.



I Cannot (sweete Ladies) but intermingle some pleasing matter, amonge the turbulent hurleburles of bloody Mars, shewing thereby in part y^e thankfulnesse of my minde due for your willing patience hitherto shouen, for which your beauties admiration shall while these lynes endure eternally remain, the which if the world as a strange & new rarytie adozeth, my self by louing (though vnregarded) cannot but esteeme it: And while the reward proceedes from some danger: harken faire Ladies what befell vnto the warrelike Louer. Who departing fro the Emperoz and the other Princes with the swiftnesse of his Tyrio returned the waye that he came thinking to meete with his Ladie, it otherwise happened, for losing himselfe within the woodie thickets of that forrest, wandering many daies hearing no newes of his soule. So great were the torments he indured, and his exclaymes vnto the skyes, that his voice was hoarse with plaints. With his dagger on euery tree he mett he engraue this.

*When Don Eleno shall forget thee,
Maye fortune then reiect mee,*

hood.
rie of his greefe, &
us added.

maint the buzing
gestring it on the
his woes: but tis
the aire. Angre
of hard by y sea
fortune, he thus
him.

And

is saide, h
known
from his
deare Loy
full Brand
the beante
Souveraign
fey you w
da hath rec
you are so
cesse Olivia
Don Elen
did, that he
ceipt, takin
ting vp his
injoy so gre
with I wer
I am not tha
me for your
Don Eleno o
haue met w
that knight
him about t
more to doe,
that I stay, I
he tooke his le
way which th
abashed, rest
but knowing
treat your La
gious Gyant
may haue son
be pleased.
And turmin
nos way, and
could neither

The second Booke of the third Part

he so much resembled him, as the one scarce was
 en from the other,) and crying out aloud, he leapt
 his beast, and flinging at the Prince saide: Oh, my
 Lorde, what good Fortune hath awayted thy faith-
 and a fidel, bringing him to see you. Whither was
 anteous Florinda come and saide: Why, how now
 raigne Prince, is it possible that in your owne coun-
 you will not know vs? Deedes are those that Florin-
 dy receiued, that byndes her to your knowledge: but
 e so changed, that I will complaine vnto the Prin-
 dia of your disquietnesse. For: *don eleazar* and
 Eleno was so amazed at what the Lady and Gyant
 at he could not aunswere, till he perceiued their de-
 taking him for his cousin Rosicler, so altogether mis-
 p his Vener replied. Most beauteous Ladye, to
 so great fauour, as to that famous Prince you see, I
 were in deede him whome I do so much resemble.
 not that Prince you knowe, though you may account
 your friend, as I thinke he is. I am his cousin
 Eleno of Dacia, and account it my good Fortune, to
 met with your company, and haue vnderstoode of
 night, that some fewe dayes hath made mee seeke
 about these desert Woods. And seeing I haue no
 to doe, I commit you to God. For euery Minute
 stay, I am in great fault with yonder knight. So
 ke his leaue, departing swifter then any thought, that
 which the courteous Gyant directed him. Somewhat
 ed, rested the Ladye at her chaunce with the Dacian,
 nowing who he was, it did not greene her. I do in-
 your Ladyship, to follow mee softly (saide the cour-
 Gyant.) For doubtlesse, some of those knightes
 haue some neede, and in ayding them, will Rosicler
 ased. *don eleazar* and *don eleazar* and
 turning the raynes of his Alfana, he tooke Don Ele-
 ay, and as he bestrode the woordes best horse, hee
 neither see noz ouertake him, and with feare to loose
 the

of the Mirrour

the Lady, went but leasure
 the swiftnesse of his Tirio.
 the Forrest, when the Sun
 by the Sea syde he spied or
 ener saue. It was one so
 some Gyants, with lesse fu-
 on his praying game, the
 Mountaines, till he arriue
 a damozell bound, that ge-
 so he perceiued that about
 He remembred not to haue
 that fought: for they were
 Gyants, and sixe of them
 Gyant, so brauely he beha-
 the Dacian thought him to
 Trebisound.

No longer stayed the cou-
 low to his horse (a signe th-
 till the ende) he strongly
 and with Mars his streng-
 not light but hitting one o-
 syde through syde. He c-
 with Brutus famous swo-
 them, that ere they coul-
 had slaine. The sonne o-
 he) greatly esteemed the
 great, that none durst wit-

First, he would rid him-
 he assaulted the Gyants:
 haughtie disposition arry-
 one that in her soule had
 ous Floraliza, who witho-
 in both handes arryued a-
 uer was there scene mo-
 btmost of their strength,
 like, they discharged the a-

The f

*And abse
The which
That lost o
Once I did
Now I mus*

*Of both I am
Insample to
And thou
That me co
Yet all I su
I cannot, be
I pine, she w
Except you*

None of all
their shadie C
ouer, and in su
Louer, that th
with a moze th
their helps, aff
had obtained, a
crosses of abse
good. They all
intollerable pa
brought him to
ned with matt
rous Prince, th
the intricate w
a thousand tim
uens, for some
sence of his dea
Of nothing did
ting his losse to
teares he had g
so vnpleasant a
remembrance o

The second Booke of the third Part

Absence is a scourge, and faithes abayer:
which you know, and well I woot doth she,
lost our Ioyes by absence, lones afflictet.
I did loue and was againe beloned:
I must weepe, seing my loue remoued.

I am a scholler to experience:
able to of a forgotten loue:
d though I liue proclaimed was the sentence,
me condemned to sorrowe, hartes tormenter.
all I sufferd, but this plague of absence,
not, being my Ioyes remouer.
e, she weepes, and we would faine now meet:
pt you helpe we neuer shall regret.

of all the forrest Goddesses, and Nymphes that in
die Celles were ending of their taskes, but gaue it
in such sort pittied the complaints of the wofull
that the gentle Darian saue him selfe incompassed,
more then celestiaall cōpanie, all of them offering him
ps, assuring him the happinesse that his constancie
ined, and that he which can so well suffer the hard
f absence, should not loose the hope of his future
hey all promised him to aduertise his Lady of the
ble passions, that for her sake he sustained. They
him to the next straight way, and departing, retur-
h matter ynough to talke off, concerning the amo-
ince, that with vnaccustomed pace began to trace
cate wayes of the gloomie woods, calling him selfe
nd times vnfortunate: for that the displeased hea-
r some offence of his, bereft him of the swete pre-
his deare Ladie, when he had most neede thereof.
ing did he more complaine, then of Loue, attribut-
losse to the enuie of his good, that with proper
e had gained, and that therfore he was inioyned to
asant a iourney. Great comfort was it to him, the
zance of the Nymphes promise: for that was only
what

188
of the

what nourished
him selfe bereft. ge ther cof.
ward admirable a knight
houre in the aftt proceede
him a Lady in I measure
knights that he proceede to
weapons, that h so ill (said
membred, this i ent to the,
ring holwe the lady could
the Citie. Sof beloued,
his Beuer, he sa ll past but
knight, can you ould once
whether they be haue of
that certainly th towards
heard the maint iuen me
lon, in companie she) that
des. Then belik lants by
Dames to loose lants by
are for valour (i though
will go to the ur: but
rompt their Lad what in
to trye their Fo take the
maund, you sho ot to her
of a knight in w most for
heart, with the l
this time (replie es whe
of his mightie h th some
colly: for being forgot
if he had neede, pre is no
answered me. Marke:
I set my selfe in ierstan
counter he did n ould so
that in all my ight you
somewhat anno it must
rayed his Beue you do
ant thought veri needeth
and

The Second Booke of the third Pa

for every one had his quarter. Enuious of the
 Timacrian casting his sheeld away brauely firming
 his stirropes raised his selfe on them, and with his
 both hands with incredible strength he discharged
 on the others left shoulder that to his saddle he cle
 and as if he had nothing done, he went to the
 with these wordes. Had I bene assured of so good
 Sir Knights, with more hope had I performed my
 Small neede had you of our ayd (braue Knights)
 amorous dame, and if we came it was only to kn
 and the cause of your battel. That was sely to r
 Damsell (answered Trebarios sonne) y came in my
 for certain businesse, and so was she taken by these
 that lyke byllanes doe nothing else but robbe in
 wayes, whose fame now your vallour hath li
 Touching y rest, ther is no reaso I should disobey
 called the Knight of y golden Branch, and no other
 I know of my stocke. Euery one had heard wor
 him, and so the ladie to bind him to asmuch a lighte
 horse saying, dismount (braue warriors that we may
 content her, Don Celindo hauing some feeling of h
 affection did so, as much did the Timacrian. But th
 rather desiring to seeke his Rosamond, excused him
 best that he could, alleadging the necessity he had
 way. but ere he went, he tooke the vallozous Timac
 and thus said.

I am sure (Soueraigne Prince) that you know
 but many daies agoe haue I had perfect knowledg
 hauty deedes, and since our kindred bindes me to
 whom I am, knowe that my name is Don Eleno
 your louing cosen, he that for the liberty of your na
 employed the utmost of his power. Immeasura
 receaued the Prince to knowe him, and rend
 many thancks for it, replied. In faith none wi
 reason ought to liue contented but I, seing my happ
 so highly blest me as to create me kinsman vnto so

the same, the
 ning his feet in
 th his sword in
 urged his blow
 he cleaft him,
 o the knights
 so good helpes
 ed my combat,
 ghts) said the
 to know you
 y to right this
 n my Demaund
 y these gyants,
 be in the high
 ath liberated.
 bey you, I am
 other thing do
 d woundes of
 lighted frō her
 e may rest. Wo
 g of his sisters
 But the Dacian
 d him felse the
 had to part a
 Tynacrian aside
 know me not,
 nledge of your
 me to tell you
 eleno of Dacia
 or native soile
 asurable ioye
 rendzing him
 e with more
 happie starrs
 to so mighty
 Princes

Princes, though great is my bonde to procure by desert in
 something to resemble them, and for this would not be kno-
 wen of the Emperoz, untill my daeds might make me wor-
 thy to be esteemed his Sonne. Those are already so well
 known, (most valiant Prince) replied the Dacian, that
 you maye deseruedly bee called the Sonne of such a
 Father: and because it behoues me presently to depart, I
 must commit you to God, in me while life indures shal you
 be assured of a perpetuall friend, his companye desired the
 Tynacrian, but thinking it discourtesie so to leaue y knights
 that tarped for him, woulde not admit it, but taking his
 leaue of all he entred throught the thickest of the Forrest, lea-
 uing them in loue with his valour and gentlenes, dismount
 did the Tynacrian, and litting vp his Beuer, he went to the
 Lady that trembling expected him, to whome she sayde, I
 thinke sir Knight of the branch, that yonder Knight in the
 Kusset did knowe you considering how hee vsed you and I
 wonder not, for some I knowe that only by hearing of your
 valour, beare you no small good-will, hauing left their farr
 remoted countries, soly to enioy your sight.

Whats the conditiō of true magnanimety (valiant knight)
 replied he that becomming affectionate, in nothing doe they
 better shew the noblenes wherewith the Heauens haue in-
 riched them, then in honozing those in reputation inferioz,
 and in credit. And therefore doe not I maruell, that more
 to ingreten your fame, then for any my deserts, you haue
 undertaken so great a toyle: wherefore if gratefulnes
 there maye bee any for so great and undeserued fauour, or
 if the employment of my person in your seruice be part of a
 my payment I will doe it, euen with my verye soule, for of
 much more doe I iudge your worthines worthy of. No lesse
 was hoped of you (sir Knight of the branch) answered the
 Ladye, and you liue not deceaued in what is desired you.
 This opportunitie looked Don Cellindo for, to leaue his Si-
 ster alone, who gaue him a Thousand blessings for it, for
 taking occasion to stail their Horses, went away frō them,
 with

ooke of the third Part

son, hauing power to request of hers
 lesse would haue done it, for though
 but little, not so small is the stayne
 receaueth, and my necessitie increa-
 ooke the Prince turned to the La-
 dy) my unhappie chance, ex-
 ng your sweete conuersation, for
 lead in griefe, hauing not some as-
 ou againe, for till the y anguish I
 , as to debarre me from al pleasure,
 all haue in being yours. Valiant
 lesse doe I feele it seing you thus to
 urther (which is yonder Knight)
 y liue assured, I tender you as my
 icture may be any cause of your co-
 your couterfeite for y same. The
 ooke it, and falling on his knees a-
 gher handes, hee intreated her
 yt. The Ladye denied it not, for
 l, and none did it euer touch, but
 xander, vpon paine of not knowing
 ie of the chiefest condition that yt
 tie.) And so seing with how great
 m, he againe kist her handes and
 knowing who they were they en-
 after then a towzing Eagle, in-
 lling Ocean. Straight did they
 oraliza greatly discontented, the
 demaunded the cause, and rela-
 h saying.
 other that this Knight will put
 2 I iudge his libertie to be great:
 other to our deadly foes, it will be
 e if any pyne for him. Let not y
 yled Don Cellindo) for if he loues
 uch the more in my iudgement
 he

of t

he departed say-
 but here is my
 countries, he
 this infirmite,
 to wander in h
 Cellindo) and
 Thus determin
 vprising, who
 meete, hastene
 in the next, rel

How the Pri
 Roj




with the preser
 of those wilde
 but his conuer
 full louer. For
 and the passion
 mated him to fo
 the night spent
 of matter, to m
 was time to rel
 small was the
 ded this infirm
 may many spea
 state they be re

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

ted captive enough. So thought I (answered she)
is my unhappinesse, that travelling through strange
s, he may see some one sayzer, and being toucht w
mitie, he will be apt to decline and so must be faine
er in his search. Let the feasts first passe (sayd Don
) and so I hope will this humoz chang into cōtent.
etermined they stayed till the next mornings Suns
, who knowing that Rosamond & the Dacian should
astened his shining presence to see what happened
xt, related.

CHAP. XII.

he Prince *Don Eleno* of *Dacia* met with his deare
Rosamond and what more befell them in
their way towards the Citty.

 Ith as many teares as hath departed y Dacian
louer from his beloued cozen of *Tynacria*, entring
within the Forrest, where ouertaken with the night,
he past it with extreame anguish of his soule, seeing
the impossibilitie of his content, hauing it onely
presence of his Ladie. His foode was soly the fruit
of wilde trees, and some of what *Fabio* had prouided,
conuersation was it which most pleased this woe.
For memorizing the troubles he had undergone,
passions, and violent sorowes he had resisted, and
to tollerate this present accident. Most part of
pent they in this, intermingling it with diuersity
to make him diuert from his pensiuenesse till yt
to rest, which made either part aside to sleepe, yet
the while that the Prince reposed. Neuer veil
firmittie any quiet till thoroughly possessed. Well
speak it by experience, though with a newe ea
be remoued from it, with a Thousand sighes be
gan

The second Booke of the third Part

with such content of Floraliza to see her selfe so nere him she loved that she could not speake. The gallant Tynacrian altogether toke of his helme, for y^e knights conuersatiō greatly pleased him, but with such quicknes she put of hers, that when he regazed on her she seemed to disgrace Venus in her pride, a blow was it for the Tynacrian which he so sone forgot not, for first it cost him much blood: he was amazed and I maruell not, for with more experience the like had befallen Apollo that did to y^e vnwarie youth. Well did the Lady note it, and was not sorrie for it, but the ioyfullest in the world, seing that occasiō said, what haue you felt (sir knight) for as I thinke by your exterior signes you should not iudge amisse of the sight of Ladies. Nay rather (replied the wounded youth) so great is the ioy it giues me, that the good was part to interrupt my sences as the thing that exceeded their dull conceits. More doth that astonish me (sir knight of y^e Branch) replied the Lady that you should make me believe so difficult a thing, yet I would credit it (liued I not vnder ceaued) that the grieuous ihewes of gallants, many times prooues but conceits, by which they would obtaine their Ladies fauours, onely due to those that truely lone. Such as the former (valiant Lady replied he) do not with reason ponder, how great good it is to line alienated, and for that cause fayning their losse, demaunde a costly remedie. And for them woulde I haue no other punishment then what a distrust doth cause them, seing what fauours the true louers doe inioy. Nay then (sir knight sayd the Lady) the experience that you seeme to haue makes you condemne what others take for good. A little is for that needefull (sayde the sonne of Garrofilea) hauing at hand the reason that shal confirme it. Neuerthelesse (sir knight answered she) you cannot perswade me, but the thought of your good employmet makes you haue that opinion.

Neuer (sayd he) would fortune make me happie with so rich a fauour most soueraigne Ladie, as to let mee taste of some good that by louing is obtained, and so thinke I long

for

of t

for the holwer t
I say (replied
onely procureth
from the Ladie
my affection by
her content, an
Floraliza) but t
you might finde
speake no plain
but her beautie
as chat to drine
trie the fortune

In these ma
ten heard that
their gallants,
from my bould
Ladies should b
the sued to: for
not with desire
for that cause m
him is first requ
other in good pa
desire, and thi
wer.

Thus spurne
the Damsell he
anger, Pou
ten your promit
more to doe but
without any con
ding (sweete da
manye dayes t
woulde let mee
bee so, letts a
mer. Greater i

2871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood

wer to imploy my selfe, that I may iud
lyed she) I wold not haue for my gallat
cureth his owne pleasure. As that must
Ladies hands (answered he) first should
ion by her will, and according to that p
nt, and not mine. Your purposes be not
but that if your deedes were correspond
t finde her that would loue you. The L
plainer nor he see euidenter tokens to be
eautie was so excellent that he thought al
driue away y time. Neuerthelesse he w
fortune of his desire, saying.
se matters of loue (most excellent Lady) a
that Ladies are alwaies sharpe and coye
ants, and so this feare hath sometimes d
ouldnes. It is reason (sir knight sayd
ould be rather loued and wooed, then gal
m: for so they should disparage their fame,
desire) they shew oftentimes some disfauc
use must the louer be discrete, (which is
t required) that he may note the one, and
od part, attributing it to her feare, and n
nd this consideration sweetenelle what is
punne they the webbe of their amorous li
sell here cut off their discourse, saying wi
You (knight of the branch) seeme to haue
romise, and seing the night approacheth th
e but straight with me you enter in your
ny companie it behooues vs to goe. And
ete damsell sayde Poliphebo) that wee sh
yes together Nauigate by Sea, thoug
t mee enioy, some on land, but seeing
etts away though great is the wronge
ter is that which is suffered by whom

of the third Part

onely in that he thought he
 selfe neuer founde him other
 with this passion.

rise,
 my lyfe,
 remoue.
 ischance,
 death,
 breath:
 daunce.
 ne,
 fe:
 my lyfe:
 none.
 prest,
 owne,
 t downe,
 t.
 rise,
 s lyfe:
 one.

the Prince, caused with
 mounting vpon the earths
 at thicket, delighting hys
 making him a witnes of
 committed no lesse ioyed
 though the Musitions were
 all harmonie, of an vnna-
 dered he till about Pine
 of the groue hee saue a
 mounted, hee coulde not
 a blewecoate, & ouer his
 shield

of the Mirrour of Knighthood

shield a case of the same couloz. Presently y^e dis-
 knew Don Eleno, and hauing purposed what he
 unbuckled, (but tooke not of) his helme, with
 to see him, for no lesse had he suffered in his look
 ruing sayd. Sir knight my Lady hath tane
 meeting in Grecia with anye Knight that shoul
 beautie to be the greatest in the vniuerse, I shou
 to the battle, but this prouided that you bee in
 your deuise sheweth the contrarie, and therefor
 fight I challenge you, for with lesse then with y
 or life, I cannot satisfie the dietie that I owe
 die. May be it presently (sayd Eleno) insolent
 my fortune had not been so aduerse, fewe daies
 a Ladie in my companie, that Apollos light had
 for whose sake against the mightie God of warr
 haue maintayned what thou hast vttered, being
 vntroth: But here is Don Eleno that being her
 sent to chastise thy follie. And without further sp
 grace he turned his horse, that a Thousand soul
 ny she had, she would haue giuen him. And tu
 in a trice, she tooke of her helme, glorifying her
 fine tresses of Gould, chaines wherein Apollo
 his deitie to be fettered in.

In that manner she stayde for him, hauing in
 fore vanquished him so. Like to a furious thunder
 the fierie Fircos, till approaching the rayes of that
 uered Sunne, with such brightnes they penetrat
 uer, that it was a wonder they did not altogether

He stayde his Courser, and without a worde
 thinking a vision what hee saue, vnable to belie
 a good coulde redounde from so strange and beh
 ments.

To him stept the ioyfull Lady & putting of his he
 ing her mouth to y^e princes said. I neuer imagined
 Prince y^e Don Eleno bore armes against his Rosa

hood.

A disguised knight
that he ment to do,
with extreme toyne
looking him, ar-
thane my oath, y
shoulde denie her
I shoulde desie him
ee in loue, though
erefoze to mortall
with your honour
olwe vnto my La-
lent knight, for if
saies since, I had
nt had darkened,
warre, I would
being so great an
ing hers is suffite
her speech to such
d soules if so ma-
nd turning hers
her armour with
hollo would giue

g in like sort be-
under-bolt came
that new disco-
etrated his Be-
ether blind him.
orde stode still
beloeue so great
beheement toz

is helme, ioyne
ined soueraign
Rosamond, for
though

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

if he had knowne) he would haue iudged it a great fauour. So litle was not the Ladies strength, but that she made him stand firmer then a bzazen piller, and not omitting that occasion, she drew her dagger, and ere hee could defend himselfe, she gaue him two woundes, the one was small on his left arme, but the other was moze dangerous being in his arme pit. From both their yssued much blood, he tooke it by the hilt (supposing they had been mortall, that with the panges of them. he snatcht it out of her hand, thise striking her therewith, but her armour resisteth them and would doe farre greater strength. They parted returning with y furie of their swordes with such mightines that it seemed a battle of aboue 100 Knights. Of weakenes and of cowardise did she condemne her selfe, seeing one Knight befoze her Lorde withstode her so long confused and amazed was also her enemye, vnable to guesse whom those Knights might be. Againe gaue the Ladie the King of Tarsis a fierce blow on the helme, which being vnaduisedly, the furious sword made no impression, but syding downe, it cut all the bzimne wyth thye buckles, and lighting on a corner of the shield, it cast all that quarter to the earth. The temper of the blade suffered no inchantment, and the strength of the arme was such, that every time it fell at ful, both armoz, and flesh it brought with it.

Sire woundes hath the Moore, and she though shee were bruised saue no scarre on her armour, for which cause was she many times for them esteemed moze then any Knight, for all her battailes shee made with aduantage that none euer could see her blood. She scapt not without her payment for reaching her fully vppon her shield, (being altogether impatient) with such horror he made it knock with her helme, that sencelesse hee threwe her on her Horse backe. Well did her louer heare the blowe, and fearing it had been worse then it was, because hee prepared to followe her, he gaue his aduersarie such a counterbuste, that he had almost

though
of Callic
plyed .
doubt b
die of m
it made
beautie
griued
stands l
for the l
celle w
him goe
trees in
coursin
content
Prince
the Tyr
the fam
tion pa
way to
Justes
resorte
that fir
and in
his sla
Cupid
towar
in as r
with o
such th
sayde .

W^hat
in Con
not bee
solemn
comm

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

we know whilst he replied he attentively gazed on his companion that spake to him, that he espied his sword and looking well on it, he knew it hauing many yeares before bene his, and seeing it in a strangers hands, he straight remembred he had lost it in Rome that night that he deliuered the Princeses from the Gyants, as is in the former part recited, so expecting no answer again said. And you knight who gaue you that sword, which cost me no little blood in winning it: and therefore must you either giue it me or prepare to defend, for I will not part without it though it cost me my life: Scarce had he said so when the esquiers knew him, for y two knights were the one Lisarte King of Tarsis, and the other his sonne Florisart Prince of Argentarua, and the pages those that afore haue bene named to be the Princesse Roselea of Rome, and Arbolinda Infant of Scotland.

The Louer was so much astonished as the Ladies to see him, for the other said, I do not denie but it may be yours knight, but the partie that me it gaue would with reason greatly be offended, if I should so easily let it goe, not shewing first that the parting from it is by force and not for that it was so willingly giuen me, which animates me rather to dye then loose it. Why then (replied the Dacian) defend thy selfe for by no meanes must I leaue it.

The Louer answered not, but tourned his horse with such gallantnesse, that Rosamond did greatly admire him, The like did the valiant Dacian & with the lightnesse of his horse he incountred the Argentinian so mightily, that without any maner of motion he made him loose his stirrups, getting hold by his horse maine for feare of falling while Eleno past like the wind. And with like celerity he returned vpon his enemy with his sword in hand finding him in like preparation. In Greece was neuer seene a moze fiercer battle, nor with moze affection admired, for the blow that Florisart receaues on his helme, doth Arbolinda take it on her soule, and that which Don Eleno on his sheeld doth Rosa-

The second Booke of the third

ouerthrowen him, and with the furie of his T
to the Tharlian, and as he past, with a flourish h
blow that on his horse necke he threw him.
vpon him & because he could not strike him w
he incountred him with his horse bestes so m
both him and his horse he tumbled to the
leaping after him with more ligeritie then a m
ere he could prepare himselfe, he closed with
his strength was greater, he raised him aloft,
him so strongly for feare of falling with him,
to sett him downe, and with a thrust made him
giue backe three paces, and ere he could open h
again vpon him. There had he wounded
sonne had not come, and syde wayes gaue him
blowes, that maugre all his strength, he went
backe. Follow him would the haughtie P
carie, when the Ladye set her selfe before him
wrath then a troden Serpent, and with both
on the youtnes shield, which like to a piece o
cleft cleane in two, and myraculously he scap
which remained with such paine that he could
Both the one and the other, Father and Son
mightie daunger, hauing such strong enemies
lant of Argentaria, returned her his answer
strength, that he made her see more starres the
uens were.

But who bewayled h blowes in their soules
and pearled teares, were the two wofull Lad
their louers in such daunger. For Artimio alr
led Florisartes death, already calles the Deque
readie complaints on Loue, calling him a tyrant
by honouring Cupid a pittifull God. If this
such excesse of griefe, what shall the beautifull
Rome do, seeing her Don Eleno with Lisarte: f
had the better, her loue disliked it, making her
easily she credited. But her sorrow helped no

Knighthood.

led to assuage her passions.
nes to make the battle cease,
ey thought it impossible, that
f some should part them, for
more fiercenes it increased.
t that defended him agaynst
ot so much, but being reached
d knees on the earth, he pas-
eriarie neuer gaue him blow
ody, so that if he gaue he re-
s Rosamond, for onely her
le saued her life. Euen whe
ng the earth of his light, there
Brusaldoro, that following
not finding, he came thither
himselfe. And seing the cru-
but say. Oh Iupiter what
ierce Pagan was gentle and
ed the faire Pages that wee

es the cause of this battaile,
ering the fiercenesse thereof.
Artimio) that it is gret pitie
for so slight a thing, & cause
inting to Florisarte) weareth
hallengeth for his, saying he
le it cost him his life. No
h, but drawing forth his
n that were on foote saying.
ng ye haue no other reason,
old me, it were to be reaso-
t for so small a cause of your
ondertaken battailes, (all
nde vpon some sufficient rea-
the victorie, making hym
with Justice, and not with
passion

The second Booke of the thir

mond feele in the middest of her hart. Valiant
fian, but he hath befoze him he that was bozn
to fight with ease, and therfore he redoubled
thicke that the others nimbienes nothing aua
his true loue to defend him from the aduanta
ther seemed to haue ouer him. Well did his
rold perceauie it, & that he might help him said
come (sir Knight) there is no reason we shoul
our friends are so busied, with resting her lau
the warlike Patrone, encountring with moze
a shippe without gouernement runneth on a sp
She drew that bloodie sword of Semiramis, a
arriual befoze the King could settle himselfe
two thrustes one after another, that she layde
saddle. Moze quicker then a rauening Tigre,
well recouered his saddle, though with some
gaue his helme such a counterbuste, that she m
his head moze then he would. Those yet were
should vanquish the mightie Lisarte, who moze
an angrie Lyon assaulted the Ladie, and with
layde on her rich helme, that onely it, & the fin
of saued her life, for with other lesse blowes th
he wont to cleaue other knights downe to the
ling with such vnaccustomed waight it made
head to the saddle bowe. She scant bowed wh
ded another, he followed too close else had hee p
ger of death, for almost with the little he reach
her in a trace yet not so much, but that ere he
ing her blade outwards, shee gaue her horse t
gainst him that she ran him quite through the
his flesh cutting away all the skirt of his armo
him a little on the thygh.

Moze furious was neuer any Lyon scene t
ned and rayning his sword he gaue her such a b
most it ouerthrew her. So nigh did the Lad
that she had no time but to cast her armes abou

part
did t
he su
pheb
think
with
it me
if I
thou
haue
with
Strai
actio
shoul
he sh
and
page
(repl
wher
gentl
the m
of sa
Don
shoul
for th
They
to be
honor
dow
with
M
the L
both
Rosam
that b
that
not

The second Booke of the third Part

passion to procure to maintain their fame untill death: well did the Dacian know him, iudging him of great valloz seing he sustained himselfe to his honour against his Cosen Pollephob and so replied. It is not so small Sir Knight as you thinke it for that knights sword is mine, and I requested it with much courtesie, which was enough for him to giue it me he not only denyed it but allso threated me till death if I moze demaunded it, which you see is sufficient for a thousand battles: and I knew that in no cause you would haue left it. That were (answered the beautionous Arbolinda with many teares) had not you giuen it willingly unconstrained, and with it leaue to be giuen to any, hauing no action to require it, and if like a Knight you gaue it, you should no moze haue remembred it. The Dacian thought he should know that voice to be of the Princesse of Scotland and so with some a maze answered: how know you good page that I did giue this sword. I was brought vp in Rome (replied y disguised Arcimio sure enough to be vnknown) where I saw that in recompence of an imprisonmet, by the gentlest Gaoler in the world you gaue it. All this while the most beautionous Roselea did nothing but weepe currents of fault teares, vnable to speake on word: yet thus replied Don Eleno. So many requires a peace valiant Sir that he should not deserue to inioy any that would deny it, and so for this time I remit the battle so please these knights. They will (saie the woefull distressed Roman) were it but to be moze pittifull then you, that forgetfull of your owne honour and what you are bound to do, wander vp and downe, challanging battles of whom you know not, and without any reason.

Moze a mazed then at first with these things remained the Dacian for by their voices he thought he knew them both, and thinking long till he spake with them said to Rosamond in her language, that it behooueth him to leaue that battle.

of the M

She that was bo content him. And so the Princes so bruse of Mauricania seeing Knight of the Bran newes he knew, not departed from him. hast possible with hi rected him, and no louer mounting on l speeches (gentle pag giue ouer a Thousa me whether you kn wen. Wherto Arctim of Dacia) to conceale not knowne you, w had a Prince so gre gainst such excellent Arbolinda, for the so discourtesie, and in you departed from C fauours which were ment then you to m but I feare you wer Then consider the b and the greatnesse moreouer the toyle my companyon ha seke you, all whic that leauing the p2 where by minutes ayre with sighes.

And that you ma ter, whose tenoz it woulde not mol

She

The second Booke of the

many dayes after, I had ynough to w
oked on her with any affection, seeing
euen had in stoze kept for mee. In
se louers dyue away the night, wher
ent pzeparing for the Justs to recorde th
chapter remembzed.

CHAP. XIII.

The aduenture that the warlike *Rosabell*
Oristoldo Prince of *Antioche* four
woodes of *Grecia*, and how
disinchant the gallant
Tartarian Zoylo.



How greatly the Magician
a dyze reuenge vpon the
(the course of this large
tioneth) for the desolation
his whole progenie beg
mightie *Mandroco*, whom
Knight of Cupid) sue in the Empire o
este in the second of the first part, whic
secuting, he busied himselfe dayly in no
instant procurement, of the wilde erecu
intent, and being so great a Pygromar
art there should be in *Greece* a most cru
th it should be at the point of an vtter ou
founde that the Souldan of *Nyquea*, shou
Greekes, the which to pzeuent hee stol
come as he was bozne, from *Oliuias* an
him away he set him in *Nyquea* in the S
he bzought vp with two little chyldzen of
Daughter, foreseeing that louing, and fre
ght be the cause to moue him with all h
e his reuenge for so gread a wronge. T

the third Part

to weepe, rememb'ring
eing the happines the
In like discourse did
where wee must leaue
ed the matter in y next

II.

Abell and his friende
e founde in the
d how they
llant
o.

gician *Selagio* procured
n the Princes of Greece
arge History amply me-
lation they had made of
ie beginning with the
Whom *Rosicler* (called
mpire of Greece, as was
t, which desire hee still
y in no other thinge the
e execution of his dam-
gromant, he founde by
most cruell warre, wher-
bfter ouerthrowe. Also
ea, should be an ayder to
hee stole away *Rosabell*
uias armes, and carry-
in the Souldans pallaice
lozen of his, a Sonne &
and stealing her thence,
th all his power to pro-
ge. This plot was not
in

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

in baine, as hath and shalbe shewed, for by this meanes
disappointed Greece of this help. So not pausing her
made his coniurations and exorcismes, wherewith
tooke those five Princes, which he educated in his Castle
the president part recordes) hauing long before prohib-
that the valiant Tartare might not enioy his beloued Tig-
ta, because he knewe that by that Coniunction (at the
that Lirgandeo succored him) should be ingendred y m-
test knight in the world, and he that should most be-
the Grecians. A great hinderance did he Judge this for
pretence, and heretofore ordered that, (hauing drunke th
morous water which Lirgandeo in the Forrest gaue him
in the first booke of the second part is expressed) hee shou-
meete with the mightie Brutaldoro, making with him
cruell battle, wherein he wished not his death, but only
hee should not ioyne with his Ladie that came to seeke h
finding him in maner already recited, till she supposing
had been dead, he built him that admirable monumēt, wh-
he set the Ladie, vnderstanding she should many yerres t
remaine. And though Lirgandeo hadd placed there for
Dame, that keeper which the Emperour *Alphebo Que*
uelling that way in companie of the valiant King of
denna, within there was others so stronge that the inch-
ter *Selagio* rested sure that none woulde haue the powe
disinchant him, hauing been therein ayded by the great
pacio his tutoz. Twise a day came the Lady forth of
lodging to lament ouer her Lords dead body. Which be-
and continuall laments penetrating the Ten-fold Hea-
ascended to the high tribunall of the omnipotent and me-
full creatoz, who with pitie admitted them, sending *R*
bell the haughtie Prince of great Brittain that way in c
panie of his deare friend *Oristoldo* Prince of Antioch v
going towards the Citie of Constantinople, because he h
the Tpyumphe were the next day to begyn. They tra-
led with some comfort, knowing hee shoulde aga
reouer *Lyriana*, hoping also to see hys deare Father

The second Booke of the t

who tooke it, not to be moued to Loue for
where with all being possesse by Rosamond
he replyed). In faith (good squiers) it gr
for the sorrow the Princesse doth sustain a
in seeking me: Although all might haue
considering with what violence I was
leaued Rome, so much against my wil, seein
ded those Ladies, yet I could do no other w
not herein any cause to satisfie them in
rest, that my Lady the Princesse hath don
is no satisfaction may come neere, no
thought a little parcell vpon account,
many, and manifold benefits, which
bounty & magnanimity erteded on me, in
a poore forlorne Knight exiled from all con
at this time there is no leasure to write, a
ing to visit Constantinople, there wil I giue
And meane while if in any thing I may p
maund me for I wil do it. Valiant Pri
mio) what at this time will most content v
for thereon dependes Roseleas life, and
Constantinople while the Tryumphes last

Whereupon they tooke their leaues no
teares of both the Ladies, and he finding
Rosamond leauing them, retourned to their
till very nere the cittie the night ouertoo
ing in the summer they resolved to passe
mong the trees and odoriferous flowers
tooke their way. Hauing suppt, the Lady
how he knew the pages: and so much the
that he tould her, she nothing suspecti
ing assured she was of him dearly Lou
said.

So that Don Eleno you haue been in p
a place, where no doubt but you paid for
he supposed the spake in earnest (it is vsual

18871
The third Part

he for therein he had not
none (notwithstanding
it greatly greenes me
tain and of your trouble
haue been remedied,
was drawen away to
seeing therein I offend
her wise, and so haue I
in any thing. In the
h done me fauours, there
e, no so much as be
umpt, in parte for so
which she of her meere
e, enriching with them
all content. And so since
rite, and we all intende
giue you my answer.
may pleasure you, com
t Prince (replied Art
tent vs is your answer,
and we will abide in
s last.

es not without many
ding the Knights with
their intended Journy,
uertooke them, and be
passe it in that wood, a
wers, vpon which they
Lady demaunded him,
ch she importuned him
pecting his faith be
Loured, and therefore

in prison, and in such
for so sweete a gaole,
suall in louers) wher
for

of the Mirrour

fore he replied. It is true de
binding me to spend my life
due to al Dames) but as my
nated mee to bee yours app
soule for your seruice, I coul
your Heauen where my glo
no longer doubt, what I on
lifes dearest blood: lets reade
Ladies haue sent me, so Rosa

TO the forgetfull, and excel
the forgotten *Roselia* health
carelesse regarde (vncind and
led with mee, that the note w
me for hauing fixt mine eyes y
son could no way let me from
resolved to breake with my fan
the vncindnesse, and vncind de
the meanest Ladye in the worl
haue indured. I expect no reme
that so soone departed and ioy
seem to be impossible, although
thee to bee a prisoner. My grie
teares giues leaue to bee no lo
Thousand contrarieties, among
I rest, wishing thou mayest yet

The beauteous Rosamond coul
some feeling w the amorous le
tent might not be remedied but
ouerblown, remayning nothin
loving a good would euer loose
she sayd.

In faith no reason hath this L
leno, since hee is not bound to
lenged him. Tis so (most beaut

The second Booke of the third Part

which they heard in Greece. Their waye they continued through that Forrest till (to ouerpasse the Sunnes heate) they went along the banks of a Chyistaline cleere brooke, which brought them to a stupendious and Magesticke building: they would not goe thither (though they were nighe them) but while Alerio prepared their collacion they walked among the trees gazing on the greene freshnes of that groue, vntill their fortune leaded them vnto the pines whereon the Knight of the Sunne and Rosicler hadde grauen their Epitaphes vpon the armes of the mightie Bramarante. Greatly ioyed the two Princes to see with what magnanimitie the Greekes had proceeded with that stout Moore whose fame had filled the world with deeds. They also desired to know what was within the proude building, they left it till after their repast, and so returned vnto Alirio, with whom they eate of the little hee had, hauing done they went a fote with all their weapons vnto the stately edifice commaunding Alirio softly to followe them with their Horses. Great delight did they receaue to see the beautie thereof, for as the sunne shined vpon the stones wherewith it was builded, they so glittered that it rebounded backe the eyes of the behoulders, the fourme of it was like to a Pyramides ending with a point on the toppe, ingrauen with so many workes that the Princes sayde, they neuer hadde seene a moze fayzer thing.

They approached with desire to knowe what might bee within a Wallace so pontificall: but for all they compassed it, they could finde no entrance thereto, moze then thorough a lane of Byers and Thornes they discryed a most stately gate. That (as indeede it was) the Princes supposed to bee the entrie. They founde it shutt, and on them certaine Letters so fresh, that they sermed but then made, the which the couragious Craike to this effect did reade.

The Inscription on the Gate.

This

No
leau
thing
tion:
eccho
made
the
his
Gyar
each
fens.
but
sed,th
he mi
and i
prote
it wh
lettin
youth
their
his
the y
and n
y his
crush
Al
for he
his bl

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

This is the Purgatorie of the *Tartarian Zoylo* whose entrance to none is permitted, but to the truest lover, that his loialty may preuaile: but with this courage, for it, and being amorous, must deliuer from torment the remorselesse *Tartare*, though in his end hee seemed not as he was wont.

No longer did Lirianas gallant lover stay, but taking his leaue of his deare friend hee knockt at the gate, but it nothing auailed, he saw a horne hang on it with this inscription: Sound me and thou shalt enter. He did it with such an ecchoe, that the sound was heard a farre off. No lesse hozroz made the gates in opening, none issued forth: but within the Prince sawe foure Arches in a rowe, in eyther of them his keeper: For in the first there was a most vgly deformed Gyant, with a mighty heaue mace on his shoulder, who at each side brought twoo most fierce beasts shaped like Gyfens. A sudaine feare this vnequall sight caused the prince: but rememdyng whose sonne he was, his courage increased, thinking that if he overcame the keepers of that Castle, he might iustly discover himselfe vnto his Father & friends, and in this desire he moued against them recommeding his protection vnto the God of the Greekes. Scarce had he done it when the Gyant with furious paces came towarde him letting loose the beasts that bellowing flung at the valyant youth, hee let them come, yet they approached (according to their swiftnes more then he would. The one snatcht away his shield breaking the handles, which not a little auailed the youth. The other tooke hold of his left side with teeth and nayles, he could not penetrate it, because for more then y his armor had beene made at Venus suite, but they so much cruelt them, that he could not stirre.

Already arriued the Gyant, hee was affrayde of death, for he ioyned with him with his mace aloft, and discharging his blowe, the Prince had no other remedie to scape it, but

third Part

for last blow, he closed
 Itt no lesse then th. o.
 With Gyant but to cast
 that strongly that he ofte
 the labell dyewe forth
 Within his infernall
 the Gyants life and
 did not stirre, but se-
 Onstoldo, to but-
 inming hee had lost,
 at he had done. He
 king his sheeld mar-
 was a bigge propor-
 our, with barres of
 and saying neuer a
 like did the Greeke
 thers armes, that
 knight of the Arche
 o impression there,
 him set handes and
 etter, for the sword
 the side, it pared away
 erpze strength taking
 pzed, yet the furious
 the peece of his shield.
 nedues blowes made
 hisched him both ar-
 wi his enchantment
 he lord was of more
 then blenes to defend
 so f. cost. So sidelong
 ingue backe so much
 to hit with a counter-
 a With his sholders,
 millen on his hands.
 curith omit, for with
 both

of the Mirrour of Knighthood

both hands he gane him such a blowe vppon h
 that the paine made him roare a loude: but as
 great was the enraged kindled wꝛath which in
 brest burnt, that the hunted Lyon by the furio
 inferior to it, and meeting with his euemie b
 mightie wound on his bꝛast, which verie near
 bone. This contented not the angry youth,
 him another vppon his helme, leauing hi
 ously wounded.

The gallant louer considering how much he
 hastened the end of the battle, and therefore, th
 with their swordes crosse, and with a speedie
 Greeke voyded his aduersaries stroake, and li
 on the le t-side he entred with a dowe right bl
 thigh was cut away. It caused the inchanter
 tollerable grieve, but it was no time for pitie, b
 he pierst his arme, and followed it with such de
 of the Castle procured to cut away his cushes. I
 deuise for giuing him a mighty blowe on the le
 tormented them that had he at that instat close
 tained the victorie, but he skaid himselfe with a
 at his waste he let flie, whi h wounded him the
 fle. Will then was neuer fene a moze crueller
 the Greeke is almost tired, and with many blow
 fed his flesh, and thought his enemy farre moze
 at first, though besmeared with his owne blood
 his woundes yssued. It was an admirable thi
 horror that their swordes made, which crea
 antike noise in Vulcan's worke-house, when t
 were forged which the Greeke woare, who putti
 in them, letting fall his shield with both hands
 his enemy (that being already resolved to die, k
 kild) in like manner came against him, and to
 discharged such blowes, that the Greeke Prince
 voyding blood from his eyes, nostrils, and mou
 uered himselfe a while after, and loking for his

thood.

pon his shoulders,
but as hee ended so
hich in the Grekes
furious ounce was
emie he gaue him a
ie neare did cut the
outh, for hee gaue
ng him their piti-

uch hee had to doe
ore, they assaulted
edie trauesse the
and like an Eagle
ght blowe that his
hanted Knight in-
atie, with a poxxt
uch desire that hee
es. It was no ill
the legges, he so
closed, he had ob-
with another that
im though but lit-
eller battaile, for
blowes that bzu-
more nimbler the
e blood, that from
e thing to see the
exceeded the ey-
hen those armes
putting his trust
ands hee went to
die, killing or be-
nd together they
since fell down,
mouth, he reco-
hisemie hee
founde

ooke of the third Part

Gyffen, that held him, hee erected
a pillar of stones, the which it all
was not idle for not able to breake
upon the knight, houlding him by
ode a Hart more stiffe helde by the
ey made this new Mars stand. For
not suffering him to bee Maister of
as they list, which made him so im-
e a mad man seeing the danger hee
membzance of Liriana, adding cou-
de him scape from them, & stepping
with his sword twixt both his hands.
ly vnto their pray but with a migh-
one in two, dead, falling to y^e ground:
him to defend himselfe from y^e furie
is beast dead, let fire at his head, ad-
tanicke youth a little kept aside, so
im, only it fell vpon the shoulder
thout armour, making him set that
aine would the other fearefull beast
here that he could not rise, nor do a-
nt of his sword against him, vpon
p to the middell, and with y^e pang
selfe with his winges. So somewhat
ping, descending strucke him with
t he almost wearied him, labouring
om the cruell gyant, that strived to
is pleasure, with which he made ac-
with the Princes life, which at this
ee with what dexterity he defended
nt, & wth what audacie he expected
neared wth blood y^e fro^m his own belly
ng with his accustomed impetuosi-
had greatly weakened him, plain-
rior perceave it, so warding the
n the one side firmly sett on his feete
expected

of the Mirrour of Knight

expected the comming of the beaste, wh^{ch}
bellowing descended. It appzoched, and
shunne his blowe with the vtmost of his p^{er}
him so mightily vnder the wing that it p^{er}
falling to the earth where it scant lighted
another, that almost in two peeres deu^{er}
the pained floore. At what time the Gya
through his Beuer like a chased boare, an
rible mace would execute his blowe, w^{ch}
y^e louer shunned it, arriuing with a happie
his mace and his left hande, whose pain
roare like a Bull, whereat Oristoldo th^{at}
also feared, he gaue backe, yet not befoze
entred with a mortall thrust pittifully
the best.

By this had he drauone a strong are w^{ch}
ched against the Graeke Hercules, giuin
so mightie blowes that he needed all his
selfe from them, and at length one reache
puissance that falling on his rich helme,
hands and knees on the grounde, hee fol
ther which made him thinke he was in
him he saw the starrie firmament, he lost
rowe his Beuer which was the cause altho
him. And ere hee gaue him another, hee
legge as he past so braue a blow that it cu

This was the blowe that gaue him the
lowing him, as he wanted his legge, he
head at the Princes feet, who receaued him
both handes on his helme, whose two fing
cut, wounding him on the head that the b
abundance, though with trouble, yet he
standing vpon one foot, which litle auailed
excesse of blod he had lost by his 4 wounds,
him to y^e passe that he could no longer stand

ighthood.

, which with horrible
and seing he could not
of his power he thrust at
at it pared it all away,
ghted when he seconded
s denided, he fell vpon
Gyant came, forming
re, and rayling his hor-
ve, with his lightnesse
happie stroake, for it cut
e paine made the gyant
ldo that was without
efore the Prince hadd
fully wounding him on

are wherewith he mar-
giuing so manye, and
ll his skill to free him-
reached him with such
elme, it made him set
hee followed with ano-
s in Heauen, so neare
he losse much blood tho-
se altogether to inrage
r, hee rose laying on his
t it cut it cleane off.

im the victorie, for fol-
e, he stumbled with his
ed him w a blowe with
o fingers thicknes was
t the blood issued in gret
yet hee rayled himsele
ailed him, for wat of the
ounds, which had broght
stād on foot. This noted
the

founds
head,
castin
fained
was f
the blo
for as
could
how t
haue s
azure
pons
thing
red w
thee a
hast d
coun
for of
holdi
moni
my ee
launc
please
Alrea
the G
ble, w
to tha
thre w
fained
sed ho
But
anoth
him s
blood
The
set hu

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

but he could not scape from him on horse-backe, with Iones strength rayling himselfe on his stirrups lung his launce at the Prince which lighted on his shield, and resounding like a bell it bounded backe as if it had struck vpon a flint, making the Greeke stagger twoo steps backwards. A hungry Tygre of Hyrcania rauening for his pray, was not more fierce then Rosabell nowe became, for brandishing his cruell launce, hee darted it to the knight lighting in the middle of his shield. It fetcht him from his saddle cleane ouer his horse backe tumbling him to the earth. More sone vpon her game is not a swift wingd fawlcen then now was y Prince, for ere the knight could rise to make himselfe redy, or he with y mace come, he gaue him on the helmeso cruell a blow that al the bym he cut with a peece of his front. The blood blinded him, & so neither did he see, nor could helpe his companion that w his mace came after y Greeke, and befoze he parted from the wounded one, he thrust at him with a point which shrewdly wounded him, the other came so much side-long vpon him that he could not but cast his armes vpon him, he gayned litle, for the Britanicke louer being of geater forces then he, breathlesse did cast him to the ground. He strived so long with him till hee drew his dagger, with which hee ended his life, striking it to his hart. It had like to had cost him no lesse then his life, for the other, though sore wounded was come vpon him, and with his dagger would backwardes haue stabde it in his brest, wearing Hector's armor none but, Venus woundes coulde make any impression, neuerthelesse he felt excessiue paine euery time he strucke him he was ashamed of himselfe, that one knight should alone so long, so handle him, & well firming himselfe, in spight of him he rose vp, & finding him within his reach, with one kinde of death hee equalld them. This battle had most tyred him, for the fall, & blowe had sorely brused all his body, with ioy he receaued his deare friend Oristoldo, that w admiration of his deeds did wipe away the blood. Greatly should

that

the B
with hi
thers. J
his arm
lost his
Hectors
bodie, a
soule, r
ing wha
kle on h
who did
straight
ched to
tioned b
greene a
word, d
and at o
both fiel
toke hin
through
knees up
being in
halfe the
him full
blowe pa
Like an a
him trem
mour and
here away
antiquitie
himselfe,
he gaue su
that hee a
basse he he
he almost
The occasi

of Knighthood.

g (the glasse wherein I did be-
hould the good that from mee they
all death by one to rid mee of so
are Lord) that my lucklesse fates
ende of toymment, that when all y
rds me without loue (vnto the
uldst shew such greatnes of vn-
t momentarie space, y I enioy
Oh if I knew my life would doe
whom should I make y execu-
ed then she did her selfe. As she
remories she did espy the Prin-
up gazed on her beauty, which
st they had seen, whē she knew
keepers, shee ended her lamen-
g frō whence she came, w migh-
after her. No longer stayed y lo-
ted the staires, & comming to y
s hee thought it impossible to o-
e cloyster to see if he could finde
we it all built of impenetrable
them open with his sword but
thought all of bzaile, on the one

of his arme and weapons
anquishing the keepers of
e his armor, for only to be
ll louer, must end this ad-

as youth put them all off, set-
nd so went to the gates, at such
ne as he arriued they opened,
thin he heard some noise which
ny feare hee entred within the
e, when two stronge knights
suddenly that they rayfed him
ie nere ouerthrowne him.

But

The second Booke of the

that be esteemed (said Rosabeli) that wth defended. That is not so much most val^{ed} (Orinoldo) as the feare wherewith they thing that you would come and fetch it for answer him but with double co^{rage} he last arch, which was not farre from him there came a well proportioned knight in saying. Sir knight within this habitate of Hector so feared that I am commanded to end this battell: and if you be pleased to do no more to doe then to put of your armor as accustomed among knights (replied the h^{appelle}) I wil do it. The he straight put of all with only his sword and dagger. Those t^{wo} side (said he of the Castle) for with these shall giue you and with no other must our So many condicions doe you propound Prince(that I dare almost saye it proceede. Now shall you see that (said the keeper two rapiers, keeping two for him selfe.

A gallant spectacle was this for he of t^{wo} in y^{ello} and blacke, which so well became Prince much commended him, and he h^{ad} redd: his age acknowledged not a more ad^{mirable}. It is doubtfull if Venus would dote againe would with more affection choose the Prince did elect the happelle Adonis. Having t^{wo} they marched eyther against the other, with as the necessitie of so dangerous a fight as the strength of the knights preuaile not. I meane that were both for the fight) then Mars did when on the behalfe of Iuno Father Saturne to a single combate, in p^{re} Gods & goddesses, with somewhat more good Greeke with his left rapier for he aimed in striking downe his enemies right one he th

ur of Knighthood.

hes drew forth y bloody rapier to
se point, and with the other hee
ue the knee: from both there yū
ng to blæd: awaye, respecting no
n the Prince, who doubted some
e so carelesly hee commended him
her, promising to renownce y va
stayed for the keeper of the Castle,
one arme, thrust at him twice out
point stiffe, with both he wou
. He stood with such desire to ex
Prince with his left arme thrust a
the bone, that the other letting fal
ould haue stooped for it: but it had
ince thrust at him on the head, y
, with the paine hee felt he forgot
so with the one he defended him
nde. The Perocke Creeke would
y aduantage, for seeing him soze
e rapier, he cast away one of his,
is to haue made his enemye yeild,
er to kill or die, and so not respect
so quickly, that ere he coulde de
us thrust he pierced his left arme.
eued Treba ios Nephew, and so
nter vpon his enemye, who be
against him, that if he had not spi
lfe vpon it, notwithstanding it
the brest. With his left hand he
es rapier, and with the utmost of
m on the side of his head and bea
ds, halfe of his head he threw at
difficuldest aduentures that then
at him down staying the coming
ho with his Squire stanchd the
ding his arme which caused him
3 extreame

The second Booke of the third Part

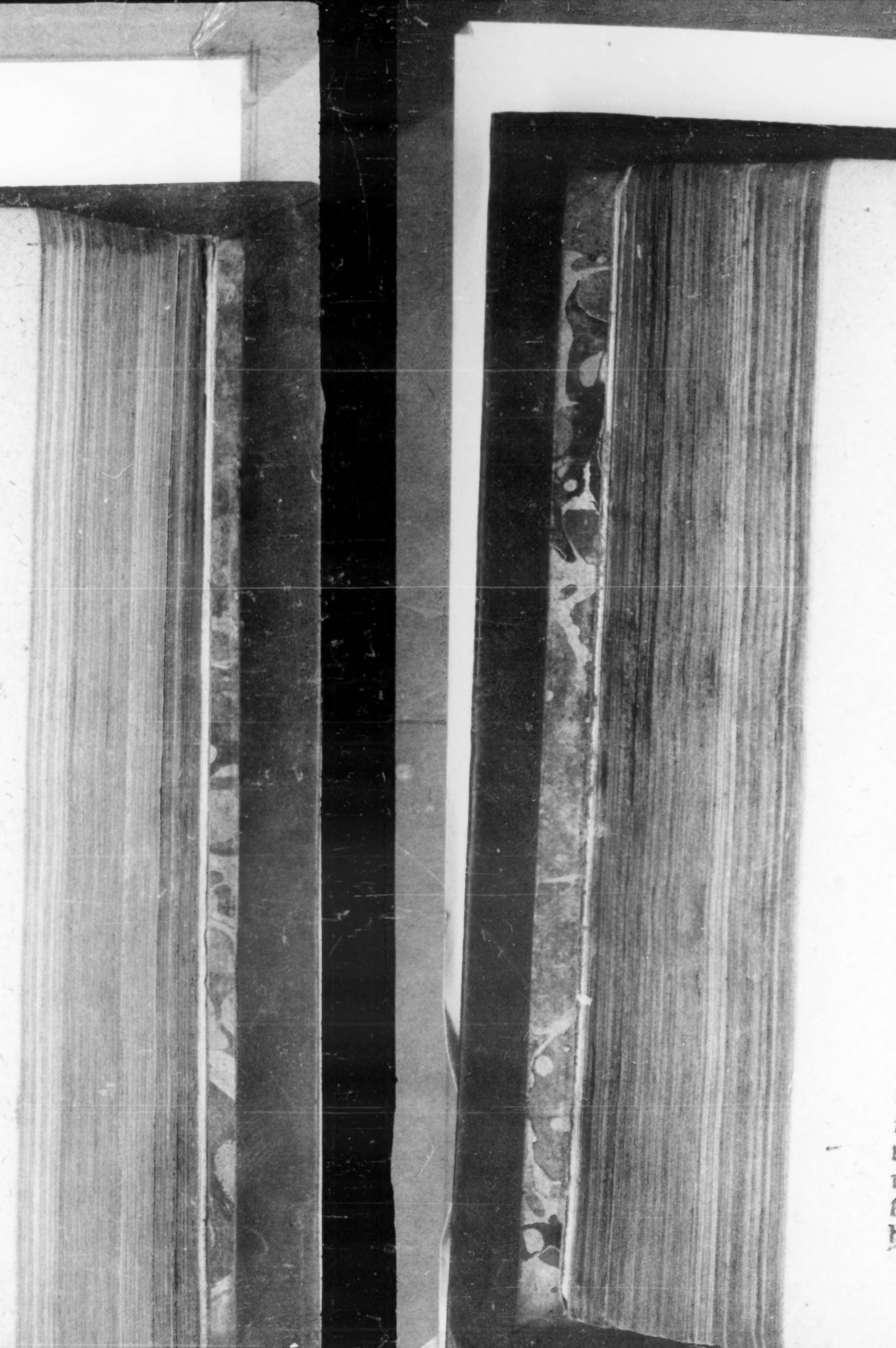
But the youth whose forces admitted no compare, recovered himselfe winning his lost aduantage, and settled himselfe farre better for he got an entrance for his armes. All helpes did he neede, for y^e two were there set onely to wastle, which at this time was admirable, for they hadde somewhat wearied the Greeke. They came tumbling at length to the gates, which occasion vnwilling to let passe, with great strength he droue the one from him, & in spight of his valour threwe him out of the enchanted hall, hee had scarce done it, when the Heauens were darkened with blacke fogges and mistie cloudes, with horrible thundering and lightning, which fearefull tempest continued for a little space, with whose end all the Castle vanished, leauing no memorie thereof, more then the dead beasts which in the beginning the Princes had slaine, hee found himselfe vnarmed with his friend & page in the open field, hee quickly armed him, for they heard new cries, which was, that y^e distressed Lady wept ouer her loue, not to see him dead, but because he was wounded. Straight she remembred how she and he had been enchanted being liberated by a knight that had slayne the keepers which the wise man had toulde her did guard the Castle.

Then arriued the Prince, presently she knelwe to whom shee was so much bounde, and rising leauing the wounded Tartare with her damselfs, she went to the Prince that with his Beuer vp was going towarde her and embracing him sayde. Most valiant knight the best that euer guerded sword, I cannot sufficiently thank nor enough memorize, your deserued praises for the good worke you haue done me and the Tartare my Lord, both which I leaue, and only say that in doing what you did, you did perform the duty which your selfe did owe vnto your selfe. by succouring the most distressed Ladye on the earth: Neuerth lesse if in part of satisfaction for so great a debt, my life may be any imployed in your content the same shalbe my chiefeest felicitie. Soueraigne Princesse (replyed the Prince) so greatly were you

wronged

wronged
to be este
more. I
she) to ex
petually a
you that
that I mo
me to cur
ted, yet t
by that m
him, and
in his fac
Ladies a
opened h
hate, and
sayde.

May it
hath so ro
my saua
mitted ag
should no
your soule
life? Ing
deseruing
that ere th
morous I
borne one
gether wi
It neuer
mee (as in
Prince h
me. Th
through th
fames col
the heauen
durate hea



The second Booke of the third Part

extreame paine, he was againe armed, and so great was his desire to end that aduenture, that without any wordes they entred into the great yard whose admirable workmanship greatly amazed them, for the pillers about it seemed of rich precious stones, all inameld with gould and blew, which ioyed euery sight. One the doore of the same yard beneath were ingrauen many Histories, with all y famous Knights most liuely figured. They sawe the battle which the Tartarian Zoylo had made w the haughty Mauritanian Brusaldoro, and his dolefull departure from his deare Tigliassa, who supposing he was dead, was by Luperfios order w drawne within that pallace. Greatly did the true Louer pittie her, seeing how intyrelly she had loued the Tartare, and how ill her faith had bene repaid. In the middle of the yard they saw a great alter like to a Piramides made for the death of some great Potentate: and round about the galleryes of the same were burning many tapers, and two seruants clad down to the heele in mourning that did nothing but loke to them, and the lampes of siluer and finest gould. As they were about to goe to them and inquire where the Prince was, they heard within one of the galleryes a doze ope from whence came forth two and two to the number of 12 Ladies all in blacke veluet with their faces masked. Thzough a way hung all of the same liuery they past vnto the Tombe, where they began a most lamentable musick whose time the Ladyes wold breake with many sudden sighes whose eccho was recorded with in y sepulcher with some doleful sounds of funerall instruments, which in the Princes caused some woefull fear when they had done: a dame that seemed Lady of the others, (wherby the Princesse iudged her to be the Princesse Tigliassa) somewhat high that they might heare thus said. How long deare Lord will my cruell fortune suffer her to liue, that with thy want, accoumpts it but a mortall torment: what life maie I liue, that only liued by seing thee: ay me pooze Tartare, how haue they offended heauens propagated my happlesse life for my greater paine,
that

that
hold
bere
man
haue
coul
cost
expec
ed th
thee
tion
was
ces, t
they
they
tation
ty no
uer, b
dozes
pen th
any of
marbl
found
side he
at
ant
of
off
t fo
Str
ting
time
seing
the
hall,
set
from

The second Booke of the

deare Zoylo, I accompt my discontent
yf I any did passe: And now lets giue
cure, for yet you are more bound then
part they would, vnto the next villag
Forrest they spied a damsell comming
swifter then the raging winde, and ar
bzaue sirs, for the Tartars life hath bee
thor thereof onely for my comming. A
she drew forth a glasse w a most Doo
fragrant smell comforted all the circum
set vnto his mouth. Oh deuine thing,
it, and hee tasted what it contained,
whole of his wounds, though weake t
he had lost, his due thanks would hee
good deede, but she was vanished vn-
famous knight (sayde Tigliaffa) must
he that his mightie arme hath freedde be
whence the world else had not been abl
from the cruell torment wee both inu
wounds, for all they seemed so freshly
ued them aboue 6. yeares agoe, in pre
Tigliaffa, that seing it receaued them
did the beloued Prince remember tha
of Bramarante a knight had giuen him
the gallant Rosabell that exceedingly
casting his armes about his necke, sei
Oh most mighty knight, is it possible
hath proceeded such a benefit? there i
equall my receaued fauor, I will not
(though eternally I will acknowledge
feare that being of such waight my sh
me in part to shew my gratitude: bu
ter comfort maye I now enioy then to
armes him that so much resembles
Grecia my greatest friend: and if in
you (sir knight) I intreate you by the

of the third Part

content my greatest content,
I giue order for your wounds
then you are aware of, de-
village, when through the
running towards them, more
and arriving sayde. Away
th been referued by the Au-
ing. And so going to hyer,
Doriferous licour, whole
circumstants the which she
thing, for scarce she had set
tined, when hee remained
eake through the much blood
d hee render for that great
d vn-seene of any. To this
must you giue them for tis
eede both you and me, from
en able to do, deliuering vs
h iniustly suffered, for these
reshly to bleede, you recea-
in presence of the unhappie
them no lesse. Thereupon
er that about the armes of
en him them. He turned to
ngly ioyed to see him well, &
ke, seeing him so young said.
ssible that from your hands
there is no recompence can
ill not binde my selfe for it,
nledge my debt) because I
my short life will not suffer
e: but oh God what great
hen to beholde betwene my
bles Rosicler the Prince of
if in any thing he touches
by the thing you must loue
and

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

I hope to enioy in this world you would not denie it
if you are Sonne vnto my Lady the Princesse Oliuia,
did the king Sacridoro in her rape, yet cost it mee
woundes, and had I lost my life it had been pleas-
hee obtayned her his desired pryze to his valour once
Excellent Prince (replied Rosicler) your valour w-
fitient without your merits on the Greeke Prince
halfe deserued, to binde all the worlde to your se-
In the rest touching himselfe, I knowe no more th-
to this Prince of Antioch, sonne vnto that King y-
med, and to mee there hath happened so manye th-
(since my Fortune caused vs to meete, in me to kn-
league of inuiolable friendship) besides what before
mee, euen afoze that Greeke Lord, that we dare p-
to saye, I am sonne to those so much behoulding vnt-
and with like deceipte was prince Rosicler by a fl-
aduenture parted from me in Lacedemon: More the
I assure you I knowe not.

This is ynough most excellent Princes (aunswer
Tartare) and for me, the greatest comfort that nowe
tune could giue mee to set mee with the Sonne of th-
whose amitie I esteeme my greatest felicitie. Anew
imbraced each other: for greater friendes the earth
knewe. Exceeding glad was the gallant Ladie to f-
selfe in companie of such halwghtie knights, but more
beloued of him that once liued by hating her.

So well did the two friendes handle this mat-
they altogether assured the Jealous Lady of her
procuring the Tartare to espouse her seeing her fayt-
meryt more then that. The gracious Zoylo dy-
refuse it, but rather expressed it was the greatest
hee might receaue.

There y bzaunches towoing trees would bend to
them arbours to spende the nights in pleasure till th-
riued at Constantinople,

cond Booke of the third Part

oming of another, for with the brauerie that
aruaile if Mars had feared: he was apparel-
ozight Steele, more blacker than the finest
colour was his Courser, sauing that he had
s, which greatly beautified him: the plumes
his owne Crest were all yellow, agreeing
ed thoughts. In the middle of his shield
his armes) was portrayed a Heart, incō-
th many flames of fier that seemed to
h was this *Motto*.

*hil't in Lones burning fier,
My heart findes no reliefe:
by should it prooue a lyer?
t shewing foorth his greefe.*

ht was not scene in Greece, nor that bet-
horse, he entred the Lists, and being excee-
e first did his dutie to the Ladies, a thing
s highly to be comended. What thinkes
d the Prince Meridian to the Emperoure
uentures gallantnes, I doubt the Ladies
re some disgrace, for such disposition few
e opinion was the Emperour & the most
s not much, for more deserued y knight
g puissance spurred against Lindoriano,
mischance had taken fresh horse: but it
e in the Blacke encountring him in the
o, did cleerely pierce it, & staying in his
ist him so mightily that cleane ouer his
ed him to the ground with the saddle bes-
for yet in that would fortune seeme to
partial fauorits he had might attribute
furniture, and not for want of strength
which

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Which was so well knowne to the cost of so many. His stir-
rops lost the distressed aduenturer, but he recouered them so
sone that selue noted it not, he returned with such brauerie
that most were affected to him, except the Ladies, that ex-
tremelie sozrowed for their knights disgrace. It no lesse
griued Rosicler, who fapning some indisposition went to
arme himselfe, for he would not haue it sayd, that in Greece
the strangers had got the best, and putting on his inchan-
ted armor he cast ouer them a russet coate, that he might not
be knowne. And in this manner vpon a mighty horse, hee
went forth of the Citie determined to enter in the listes, in
Ladies behalfe, astonished at the knights valour vnable to
imagine who it should be, bethinking himselfe it might bee
the Mauritanian Brusaldoro, hauing heard him highly pray-
sed. Whereupon he stayed to let the day be farther past, that
the knight might get more honoz, who like a fleshed Lion in
the anguish that for his Lady he sustained, twas pitie to be-
hold his lamentable blowes, for eyther slaine, or sorely woun-
ded none escaped his hands.

Well did the Mirrour of Chivalrie Claridiano see it, and
had the like desire that his Uncle: but he so despaired to see
the strangenesse wherewith his Ladie vsed him, that hee
would not arme himselfe vnles he were commaunded. And
to moue it, he stept to the Princesse Oliuia (for with her the
Queene of Lyra Archisilora still accompanied) and to her he
said, I helieue most excellent Princesse, that he in the black
will so well behaue himselfe, that he will force many to trie
their fortune, although some are so without it that not going
with some particuler fauour, they are like to meete with
some greater misfortune.

Well did she perceauie with what affection hee had
eyed the Queene, and as shee was skilfull in that art,
by the cause shee spyed the effect, and desirous to speake
for him, shee sayde. Greate reason haue you braue
Prince to require so iust a thing, and if myne may in any
thinge

The second Booke of the third Part

Many times would the two louers willingly lose themselves among the thickets, where they might inioy what y cursed Selagio pretended with his artes to auoyde: and it was no small benefite vnto them for the Lady remained w child of a Sonne that in armes was called Mars, & a daughter, that in beautie excelled all those of her age: for whose loue one of the Graeke Princes doted till the death, as the fourth part recozdeth: where a while wee must leaue them returning to Constantinople, for alreadye were the Tryumphes begun, with farre greater solemnitie.

CHAP. XIII.

How the Tryumphes were againe begun, and what admirable battailes happened in them.



With such verie gret affectiō hath y wise Lirgandeo (faire Ladies) shewed him in the discription of the Tartarian Zoylos affaires enlarging himselfe out of measure in them, that it hath made me moze labour in the abzeuiation of this inchantment then if my selfe had newly built it, indeede fearing, that though the matter of it selfe bee pleasing, yet the tediousnes of a harsh stile might proue displeasing. The discrete breuitie with it byingeth the content, so it arriue not to a point of extremitie, for then with the newe name turnes it to discontent by loosing that good, which by a safe mediocritie it had obtayned. Procuring this in all thinges I dare almost say, that (your beauties) haue tane some delight in reading it, which by the other way had not been so: for though the Iusts that past in Constantines great Cittie deserued a large admiration, yet wil I strue to be a delighlesse prolixitie procurer (in some respect) of heauie Melancholy, rather sinning by being short, then offending with a little superfluous length. So at length the terme appoynted for them being come
upnest

18871

of the Mirrour of Knight

wynnest purities of Patures treasure) scar
sheapheard of the Deauens, displayde his
ouer the earth in company of his chafe Siff
ragious Prince of Niquea, with his brygh
armour presented himselfe in the place, to
Princesses seing how well the stranger n
beauties. Peed he had to inure his hāds in
no soner leapt into the listes, when again
himselfe a well ppozitioned knight, clad
mour, with so many pretious stones that
holders sight : in the place a moze braue
not scene. In his shielde was pictured th
tious Lady, closing her eyes to a Prince t
soule with these wordes.

*What auails it to be strange,
My true-loue to disdain:
When neither faith nor it, doth range
But will for aye remaine.*

There was none but fixed his eyes on hi
uing it as he that was no lesse then the val
Prince of Assiria, who departing frō Nyqu
way towards Grecia, where it had been be
arriued, soz by the swiftnes of their horses
ting, they gaue one another such fierce inco
Græke Ladies gretly feared the miscarying
who was incountred so strongly, that hee
stirrops, and also was it maruell hee did no
dle too, if warily he had not got hold of his h
with it, he did a little ppolong his honoz, n
passe forwards. At this time the Assarian go
being hit on his enchanted shield, he was so
he was throwen out of his saddle, twas his
fall on his feet, and so with incredible spæde
lost saddle, hee went out of the place le
see the valour of the Ladies knight. A runde

nd Booke of the third Part

in henceforth I giue it you though seeing
 vs, it should be attributed onely to Ro-
 the Queene of Lyra, that will giue it, if it
 you, for otherwise against her is y^e wrong
 ell she may haue such a defender. The
 reby suspected somewhat: and so glozys-
 th a heavenly tincture she replied. Little
 nted fauour auaille, for the valour of the
 ce most (excellent Lady) and rather there
 esse in cōmanding. that they put in doubt
 with their fortitude haue assured. As
 mpt my selfe, and in so much that I know
 call my selfe happie. And this is the cause
 any to goe forth in my name, but beeing
 necessitie, beeing able to doe it my
 not intreate it of any. And because
 more importuned shee turned to him in
 ore furious then a hungry Beare ran vpp
 was no small vertue in the Prince to in-
 e this bitter answer, a Thousand cries
 uen publishing the iniustice done to hys
 such cruelty, he departed from thence, for
 n not leaue not so much as to take leaue of
 of his tormented soule. Who with attē-
 morous knight, that at this time with
 chosen a strong launce, for at a corner
 tred two knights no lesse to be wondred
 at the same instant, entred two other no
 ge first. These last were armed in Pure
 parrs of azure and gold, on their shieldes
 er of body had a Sunne, in middle of a
 these wordes.

ough neuer fauored,
 proofes hauing done:
 in the Sunne.

His

of the Mirrour of Knig

His companion that a better disposi-
 ther Sunne eclipsed, with this Motto

It changeth effect in me,

For gazing on his fier.

It augments grieve and desire

These two knights posies greatly d-
 for if yee bee remembred they bee none
 mighty King of Tarsis, and his sonne Fl-
 gentaria, that came accompanied with y^e
 cesses, they pass the place with more gr-
 done. The like did the twoo first, for
 most rich armour, hee on the right han-
 gante of Fenicia, had a siluer armor,
 shield a Wyne tree, and hee himselte
 with this posie.

In solitude delights

He that on loue doth dote:

But most, he that's remote.

That knight is not like to want bat-
 peach the Ladies worthes shewes him
 eury one liueth by being alienated, ty-
 it to triall. Now am I very glad (say-
 daraza) that so free a knight maye m-
 blacke, that is so constant in his alier
 his companion shew himselte on poak
 Torisiano, who was all in Carnation a
 golde and azure, a bzauer temper was
 In the middle of his shield was set a k-
 loue, accompanied with all his trouble

How sweet is that same sig

That gazeth on his woes:

It doth his hart delight,

Though it with grieve vnd

Z

Knighthood.

disposition shewed, had ano:
Motto about it.

ne,

d desire.

eatly delighted euerye one,
e none other but Lysarte the
Anne Florisarte Prince of Ar-
with y two disguised Prin-
more grace then Achilles had
t, for both were armed in
ht hand that was Don Ar-
more, full of Lillies: on his
himselſe leaning againſt it,

te:

te.

nt battailes, that to yin-
s himſelſe ſo free: for as
ed, they will preſently put
(ſayd the beauteous Lin-
ye meete with him in the
alienation. No leſſe dyd
poaked (being the gallant
ion armour, quartered w
was not ſeene in y place.
t a knight languishing in
oubles, with theſe wordes.

me ſight,

oes:

ht,

undoes.

hauing

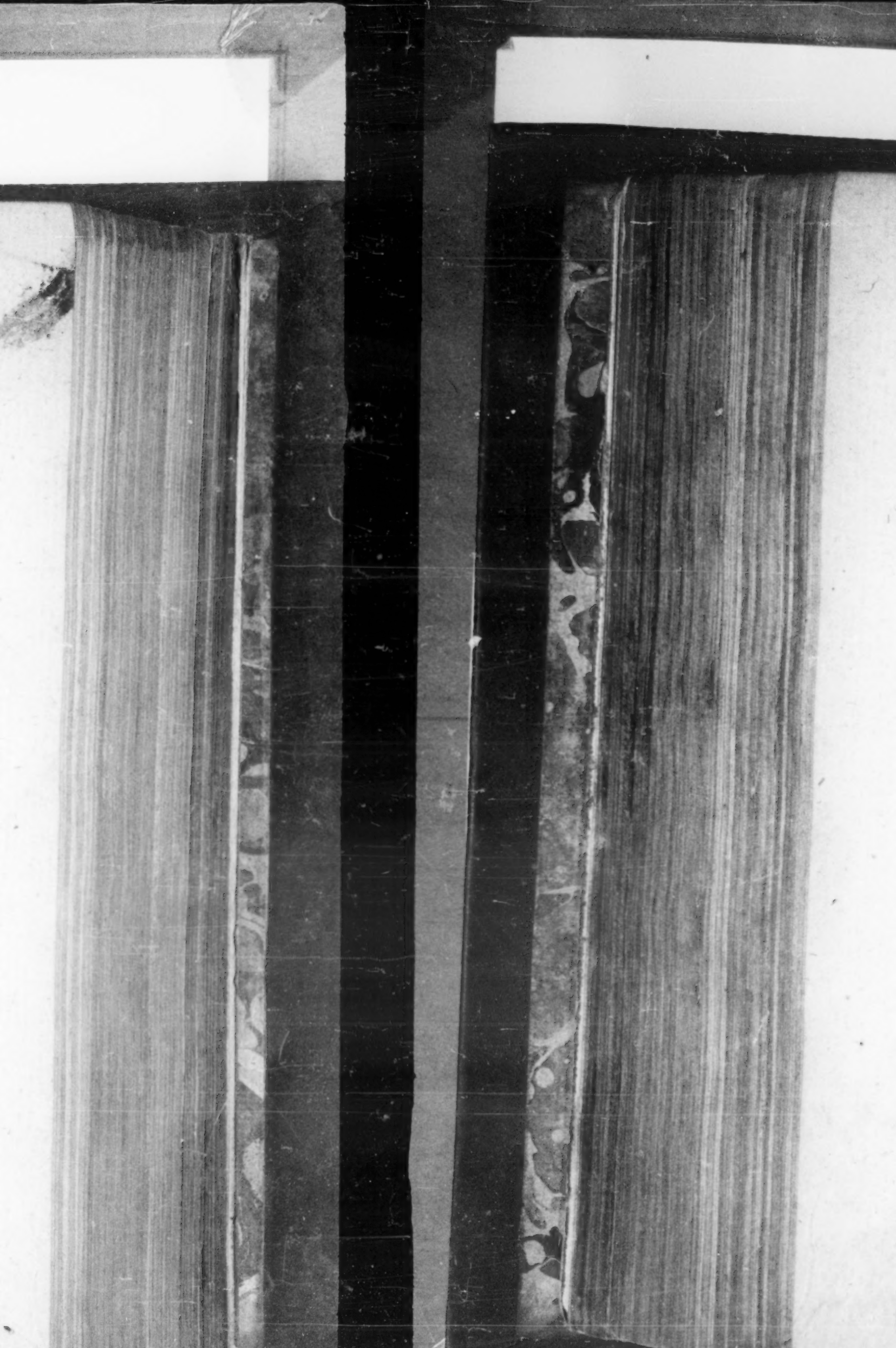
18871

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

noyed a fact. This knight first arriued at the beginning of the listes, whose hawghtines well shewes him to be y^e mightie Brusaldoro, that not finding the Tynacrian, hoping to meete him in those feastes changing his armor, came thither at the instant that the other knight did the like, disguised in the habit of an African. Who comming with so great desire to Iust, without farther aduise would haue entred the listes, had it not been that the furious Mauritanian said, you knight, because of your new attire will not onely commit a discourtesie, but thinke it should be tollerated, keepe you out for others haue first arriued, and with more reason to Iust then you. Courteous was the knight: for if I be not deceaued it is the gallant Greeke Rosicler. So he replied. So greatly hath yonder knight angred mee, that I thinke too late euery minute that my reuenge is deferd.

Pay the stay (answered the Pagan) for gret is thy forgetfulness so much to long to meete with him in the blacke, and therefore to deale with mee the large fielde will afforde vs ampler roome. To make thee know and confesse thy rude vnciuillnesse I am content (replied Oliuias husband) and without more repetition of words with the Iudges leaue they went vnto the field. The whole world would I haue present (most beauteous Sancts of Venus Temple) to viewe the most valiantest that it containd. Now doth my want crie out for helpe, intreating with incessant prayers, that Thalia or the recorderesse of memorable acts vnto eternitie, Cho (I meane) would dippe my slowe pen in their brooke of euer-flowing eloquence, for therof it hath no litle need, & without it dares not, daunted with feare, of insuffitient skill to distinguish the particularities of a war so admirable. There was none but with attention turned their wondring eyes vpon the battle.

The furious Bembo woulde not loose it, but rather raising his Beuer vpon his fierie Courser, leaning on his lance stood to behold it. With more horroz then a Tempestuous Sea met the two most mighty warrours, in the



Part

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

None of the
king in the
they past for-
tune was he
against him
countred him
merited com-
ing him fro
ed no small
ongest in the
ardes passe
se that rose
lebrated the
ee bee called
s taken, (3
the knights
hemis,) en-
eth is great
plye which
he we howe
2 vpo a gal-
to assure our
There is no
maund, the
been he that
ned (reply
without any
Their chat
mourning
ouerthrow
Many sup-
de bee, for
some pittie
re with her.
with what
crueltie

crueltie his loue his repayd : And if his fauours were equall to his strength none might moze bragge of valour then hee. Those that on a sudden begyn to loue, (answered the beauteous Rosilucra that in the secret of her soule, had portrayed the knight with such coulozs that none but death could wipe away) any little occasion ministers vnto the cause of Loue: but lets see what shall become of the knights of the Sunnes, that seme of a valiant disposition, his Carrier had y bzaue King Lisarte taken, incountring with the blacke knight, so fiercely that he thought he had been broken in pieces, either past by the other without any mouing. Of the valiantest was the Tarsian, but he there met with Bembo, then whom the Pagan nation neuer knewe moze halwghtier, and couragious knight: who taking another launce incountred hym so mightily, that hee brought him to the ground, & himselfe had almost accompanied him, for losing bydle and stirrops was fayne to stay himselfe by his horse neck. Like to a fiery Dragon his amorous sonne ran with him thze launces, vn- able to moue eyther of them from the saddle, to both theyz extreme griefes, that like to bloodie Lyons, they with their owne handes choosed their launces, & withy-excessiuenesse of their forces incountred so puissantly that the beloued Argentaria came to the ground with his horse slaine betweene his leggs, he leapt from him for feare of some disgrace. The Achayan with the strong shooke staggering backwards lost his saddle, falling on his feete, but with so small feeling, that though the couragious youth stept to him with his swoord, drawen, he so soone saw him not.

Almost was the whole place in an uproare, for Florisarte required a battle alleadging hee was not overcome. So farre passe this matter, that of necessitie it was carryed to bee decyded by the Emperour and other kings there, who adiudged that the knight of the Sunne, could not returne to the Justes nor demaunde farther battle, because hee had lost his saddle, he held his peace seeing whoe hadde orde- red it, and so on foote he stode looking on the Justes, talking to

The second Book

middle of their strong shieldes
ly piercing them. The furie
on their best plate, fro wher
launces mounted into the high
titude might haue bereaued A
Forwards they past without
ting grieve then eyther did com
backe. So with this raueni
alike, they returned either vp
was not sene (then the Greeke
the weapon that at his saddle

And so at once with the str
they discharged so puissant bl
ring their furie) thought ther
his Burgonet lost the Greeke
cast along his horse back. Whe
reaching him fully with the h
bled him from his horse, notw
fell sencelesse vpon his Cour
through his nose and eyes. A
full stroakes witht themselue
borne to it quickly ioyned. I
entred with his sword for vnt
betwene the closing of a buck
fierce or dangerous blow that c
but to see his owne blood spilt
ted not the Moore, but as he
he stricke him on the helme.
and therefore he could not ex
king him on the outward side
ned awaye (for fewe were ni
not onely loose the blowe,
of his victorie: because th
wayght of the Clubbe so di
after, that the Pagan might a
thrustes at one of his sides.

Mirroure of Knighthood.

at put on that precious armour, that with
the wise Artynidoro had forged. He
such paine that hardly hee could drawe
returned altogether like an Hyrcanian Ty
his Steele Face he gaue him suche a blow
of reuenge he somewhat mist his ayne)
ought himselfe wraapt in some clowde, so
to be to Heaven: seeing such multitudes
his head, hee arose, and began so fierce a
Princes which beheld them rested ama

you braue Prince (said the Emperour Al
) of the valour of these knightes: for
haue not seene the like: and hee of the
Byants, greatly resembleth a Pagan that
after (about the armour of Bramarante)
deare friend the Tartarian Zoylo: for by
ing, and the liberall dominacion he hath
the battaile, I iudge him to be hee: he
pes (replied the Scythian Prince) for his
not in shew from that youth we met in
me wee left with opinion to be your cou
the victorie will be his, for the Prince
himselfe said) was with two blowes by

in the place did suddenly arise, broke off
if any of them obtained any aduantage
ourite of his would celebrate the blow of
w, some the Greeke, and some the Mau
raile aboute the heauens.

nearie were they, and seeing the sunnes
e nights beginning to appoach, with the
zces they discharged their furie in such
k each other fro their horses, to y astonish
holders. His Face dyd the Greeke
lose

The second Booke

to the timorous Squires. Long
perour sent him a Courser noth
lost. Both Father and Sonne
magnanimittie.

At what time matters past to
together there entred the yarde
position all the lookers on fixed
one y best became his saddle, w
halfe Doones ouercast with a
pummell there hung a mightie
(that of fine skill seemed) was
gured, and hard by her a Phenix

It is a quection hard,

And enuer was most hard

Whether the Dam or the

The Knight seemed so braue
rare a constitution, that many
lesse brauery adoꝛned the secon
Roane Courser was moued, h
of a sad red couloꝝ with greene
On his shield was a beauteou
dowe, and hard by her foure
he with his sword all bloody,
cut off their heads, and hauing
Lady, that stretching forth on
cept that seruice, also on the sh

Thryce happie is that

Which doth assure him

That lye, not in loue

For a iust guerdon iudged
was figured meritorious of m
knight, that in the beginning

y Ly-
could
ym
anian
ured,
per w
nt out
night
at his
st vil-
oud,
haus
auell
, in
there
Done
drest
lette

y-

ising
com
ye of
n tho
net of
ocee
which
what
pent)

The second Booke of the third Part

loose out of his hands, first executing a braue blow, which wzunge his aduersaries helme about his head, greatly blinding his sight: they had not fallen when quicker then imagination they rose. The Greeke drew forth that good sword, which Brandafidell did giue him, when he lost his of Queene Iulias: and with it before the Pagan settled himselfe, he stricke him about the toppe of his shield: he cut away a peece therof with all the bzinne of his helme on that side, he made him stand trembling like a leafe shaken by a Northren blast: he well noted his amaze, and so lost not the occasion, for with a loftie flourish ouer head hee made him there repaire his warde, leauing his legs without defence. Whereuppon the Prince stept moze in with his left foote, and standing strongly thereon, withdrawing his sword, with both handes executed his blow, on his left thigh cutting it to the bone. This wound was it that gaue him some aduantage ouer the Mauritanian, and also the victorie, if the battaile to the end continued: For the Pagan began to loose much blood, and to shrink through faintnesse on that side euery time he was there charged. They parted to breath, for foure houres without rest had they combated since they began. The Greeke as he walked east vp his eyes towards the windowes, where he spied his deare Oliuia: and with a sighe breaking from the middest of his heart he began: I know not why thou shouldst esteeme thy selfe Prince of Grecia: to haue obtained thy Lady by force of armes? Thou art wzonged and not in the least degree so to be praised for it, hauing no reason for it seing that before al thy Parents, freinds and kinsfolkes, their presence must beare witness of all thy former honours wzacke in this sole battle. Where, in this particuler Combate with a single knight thou loost in one minute all the glorie in so many yeares with dere experience and losse of thy dearest blood, thou diddest atchieue. No lesse exclaymes did the furious Pagan, breath into y air, blaspheming gainst his Gods, saying. Why now none need feare the name of Brufaldoro? nor is there any cause his La
dye

emies, so
cōplaine
rare per
arie from
oint of a
emie that
To meete
executed
one knee
ler being
e, setting
ing hym
a thrust
2, and he
with both
ence of y
is cleane
set on the
nd so en-
t he could
armes a
zastle. He
m down,
fast, and
ly swing-
aces from
en, when
s were a

exceeding
all about
s and hys
sustayne
the place
he valian
the Pagan
began

The secon

spent) to keepe him
tailes of the same, v
sight. In his gown
liuia, Oriselua and h
forst them as often a
course what eyther
aduentures, for the

Alreadie was the
one side of the place
mo?, and of the gall
had Justed. The v
hande were all whi
stones, and on the b
ted the beholders aff
lesse rich then his ar
companied him. &

scrowle, with these

This ha

In it find

In rich e

For lovin

This cōming so su
samond the halwght
her deare Don Eleno
he wonne in Roome,
friend Nabato had se
dy drawen in that m
guirded on, her swo

The cross

Eternize

Being aff

They past their co
one iudged that hee

Second Booke of the third Part

him from comming forth to beholde the battaine, which he thought would bee woorth the gowne he toke his place betwene his deare Orlando and her Sacridoro, whose swete friendshippe often as they could to meete, delighting to discover what they had done for the other, in the dangerous way to the obtaining of their Ladies.

As the furious Bembo entred the listes, for at that place, appered two knights in the richest and the gallantest disposition of anye that thitherto. The warlike habillements of him on the right hand white, garnished with manie inestimable jewels, the best a hart of Rubies: his grace attracted all eyes affection. Upon the shield that was on his arm, was portrayed his companion y armed. At his feet a most faire hand that held a banner with these words.

*This hart that love hath wounded,
In it findes his reliefe,
A rich exchange for griefe,
For loving it is againe beloved.*

Which so sure denoteth that he in the white, is Rowland the good knight, the Prince of Scotland, that came with him. Eleno, who was clad with his precious arms, excepting, that on the shield which his companion had sent him, he bare the portrature of his Lady. In that manner when with his owne hand, hee had written on his sword with this Rotullo,

*The crosse of cruell absence,
Ternizeth his fame,
Being assured of his dame.*

Their course with such gallantnesse that everie knight that hee in the blacke was like to sustaine some
dis-

of the Mirrour of I

disgrace. The vulgar sort with
publish it. The Princesses and
zed to see so many lovers in the place
such firme hopes, as rather they w
leave to Love.

Another thing they did see which
suspect what they might be, for they
with wonderfull courtesie kept
and demaunded his shield for the
it him, wishing that her favour might
Dacians valour did assure. Notwithstanding
Maestic he turned the best horse
and with his strong launce hee sp
rie. Be a while attentive to me
tures perfect beautie.) Surcease
ther of the was most gallantest, c
uens communicated more bravery
nes that conducts the flower of
with your eyes (howe much more
may lose the sight of a mem
terrible noyse of two roaring
furie of their powder fiered bowes
then did rebound from their fier
maruell to see the Dacian here get
horse.

So he met him with all the power
that cleane over his horse backe
sure of his length imprinted on
ping on his feet, he had recovered
cian did returne unto himselfe.
had not receaved a more stronge
his bridle, and his stirrups, an
present that in such extremities,
give him, he had also lost his
tained himselfe, for the losse of h
more honozable, then the leavin

The secon

began to faint by reason
his aduersarie knewe
was argued who it m
rightly on whome in
batio himsele comm
At last it was known
It could not be kept so
who (liuing by louing
millions of pearled te
rosed cheekes seing in
had put himsele and s
out-cries she had desc
As much grieve for it
longer able to with-h
light was altogether
Ocean : at what tim
for lights . From out
boue 1000 torches :
ries , that scarcely th
Neuer a steppe made
it printed on the grass
felt a bloody sweate ou
uantage he had ouer t
wound of his thigh .
Moore closed with his
so entred to the wastl
ere his enemy had too
ger into his left shoul
nian snatch it, and wi
he did lose : But the
in such manifest vige
hand strongly to stay
the Moores backe whe
perox with all those
With-hold I say b
be ended with such cri

cond Booke of the third Part

reason of his wounded Thighe, whereby
 we his aduantage ouer him. So long it
 might bee, that euerye one happened
 in deede it was: For the Emperour Tre-
 manded all the Pages to tell the truth,
 down that the valiant Moore was Rosicler,
 ept so close but it came to Oliuias hearing
 (uing him) began to bewaile y^e battle with
 ed teares, that ran down the current of her
 ing in what cruell combate her deare Lord
 and so besmeared with blood. With many
 descended but that the Ladies stayed her.
 for it tormented the good Trebatio, that no
 with-hould tooke his horse, when Phæbus
 ether drencht in the Cauers of y^e western
 at time the two famous warriors cried out
 in out the Tent were presently brought as
 the: so wearie were either of the aduersa-
 ely they were able to stand on their feete.
 made the Moore but with his blood hee left
 e grasse: and the Greeke, sturd not but hee
 ate ouer all his bodie. Great was the ad-
 ouer the Pagan, because of the troublesome
 igh. At length disparing of the long fight y^e
 ith his enemye. The Greeke well noted it &
 wattle with more aduise then strength: for
 ad tooke hould of him, he had it abdo his dag-
 shoulder. Out of his hand did the Maurita-
 nd with it would haue had recouered what
 at the couragious Greeke that saw himselfe
 däger had no other remedie, but wth his left
 o stay it, and with his right to take his, frō
 ke wherewith he had ended his life, if y^e Em-
 hose Princes had not then arrined saying.
 I say braue knights, for this is no battle to
 uch crueltie about a matter of so small conse-
 quence.

of the

quence. Then can-
 onesse. The Gree-
 doe no lesse then w-
 portunitie of his f-
 King to go with th-
 but reputing then-
 extreame fayntne-
 of the Cittie, with-
 had, and neuer per-
 aduersarie was or-
 lage he arrined at,
 and by his Lady
 in such cases: the-
 which he did until
 tending fully to be-
 was much grieffe
 would his Mother
 him expecting the
 battailes then in t-

The end of the T-
 ued to



ded from a wear-
 was no cause (t-
 oue,
 if

The second Booke of the third Part

prauising with maiestike gate, till he approached his Ladie, and with exceeding ioy demaunded his shield, with a thousand thousand imbracements shee would haue giuen it, for she loued him as her soule: but she contēted her selfe he saying. Courage deare Prince for with so sure a faith tis easie to bare away the victory. With the noise of many Instruments, and high prayles wherewith the popularity celebrated the russett knight Don Eleno with both sheeldes went where the famous Bembo had hung vp his, (in whose place) taking away that hee set his Ladies, leauing the Greeke Nobilitie of Lordes, and Ladies pensue in guessing who both they might be. The angry Achayan at this time, cursing his unhappie starres, prickt through the multitude: more then one derely did abie his rage. By this time a gallant knight had leapt into the Lists, yet in more despayning colours of any that day seene: for he was all in yellow, and blacke with some barres of a sad russet, on his shield he had a Ladie at whose feete himselfe lay all alonge, with this motto,

*Did euer any see,
The Ladie that doth delight:
To equall her despight,
With that fier which burneth me.*

Unto the Iousts there entred not a knight of whome a more generall commiseration was had. The Prince of Hyberia did deserue it, who for the loue of the Armenian Kings Daughter that bordered in this Confynes, extreemely languished, being therefore constrayned to tread the steppes of Pilgrimage, through foraine lands, arryuing at length at Constantinople: hee was of high valour, and one of them that shewed himselfe a capitall enemy to Greece: his name was the unfortunate Lindelfo. They met with the puissance of their armes: but what auails it though
the

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

the Dacian loose his raires, and hould by his horse necke, if at his turning he saw his aduersarie on the ground, though quickly he leapt into his saddle: he pittied him remembering the time, when comfortlesse accompanied with nought but despaire to ease his torments, hee wandered through the world in that manner. So hee craued his pardon requesting him to accept him for a friend. Generally was the yellowe knight esteamed for the braue encounter hee had made, and to ouerthrow him was already iudged impossible, so furious & so lucky did the Loner raunge about the yerde.

A sudden rumour, buy'd through the place, with the entring into it of one of the gallantest Gyants in the vniuerse, and so loaden with fearefull weapons, that the farthest of yet thought himselfe within his armes. This was the courteous Brandafidell, bringing with him the beauteous Floralinda being himselfe clad in rich armour of a mingled Red and Greene, and garnished with many Lillies.

On his shield hee had figured a Tower, wherein a faire Ladie seemed to bee inclosed, himselfe standing at the Gate with that huge Face: and about this deuise were these wordes inrowled.

*Being committed to my trust,
None euer past this way:
Nor Lone, in proude aray.*

There was no Laoy in all the place but wth gret laughter applauded the gyants deuise, seing the inequality betwene the Lady and him. She was attired all in green, cut vppon Red, blackt in such curious manner, as if it were some workmanship of Heauen. A thin sendall masked her face except the sparkling light of her twoo Sunnes, whose beames

ke of the third Part

amonge vs, and my selfe as
ir you, may I but know hee,
I am so much indebted to your

(answered the afflicted Lorde)
ualitie, that I knowe no re-
ate the cause therof, is a newe
2 that to doe so is certayne
doe I knowe that I feele the
ring death, and would yt
h happie it, and I farre hap-
yse is a grieve, his death is a
ot doubt but the tormentes of
suffer is well knowne to whom
alienated soule from my selfe,
my merits doth withhold immen-

ord for she was so free, that
not haue had him been more
by knowe: yet she remayned
atefull and to be more intire:
why then goe with your fa-
or I will carrie here with these
Neuer did Louer receaue such
Aniunction imposed: swell
mits with so rygorous an an-
lye, nor knowe hee where hee
arting him from her wyth so
he shutting of the doore against
imagination did the Lady sit
with no lesse glozie did Rosa-
Do returning to the listes she
zure armor, crosse bard wyth
ully in her naturall lynamets,

of the Mirrour

*Is't not pittie to be
That no sayth now
Whilst true loue is
By iealousie that m*

Euery one well noted the
the grace wherwith he past
he did his dutie with more
fle auailed her towards the
Troians loue) to looke aloft to
spied her welbeloued Lord
phebo, and on the farther si-
pleasing conuersation discou-
straight knowe that was the
of her grieve, her bigge heart
must aske the first shee mett
were. Shee was answered
ued exceeding ioye, becom-
rash misdeeming, and oppro-
Orissides. She could not im-
with him to craue his pardon
breated. She returned to the
feare the gallant Rosamond
for her purified thoughts ha-
that all the place seemed to
her appoaching the Calidom-
ming choller sayd.

In sayth Sir knight if I
doe attract your strength you
the victorie: though hauin
that is to bee done, you
deferd your fight, by short
There is not so little ty-
macia) but will suffice to n-
reipte that doth possesse you
her anger woulde not perm-

rrour of Knighthood.

tie to behold,
th now preuaileth,
lone is controld:
that most auaieth.

ed the Jealous deuise of the Knight, &
e past for wards, till the theater where
more Maiestie then ioye: At not a lit-
s the Iustes (for this was Sarmacia &
aloft to the windowes, for there shee
Lord sitting next to the Empero: Al-
ther side the beauteous Floralinda in
discourfing with her Meridian. She
as the Ladie which had been cause
e heart coulde not indure it, but shee
e mette, whom that Ladye & Knight
oered the truth, whereat shee concea-
becomming nowe penitent, for her
opprobrious exclaimes, agaynst her
ot imagine the hower when to speak
ardon of what against him shee had
to the listes the ioyfullest aliuie. A
ond wil be in some danger with her,
ts had to such manner incouraged her
d too little to mayntaine her. At
alidonian Patrone with some see-

if from the sight of Ladies, you
h you may already assure your selfe
auing so little daye, for the much
you might for this present haue
hortening the beholders hopes.

e tyme (replyed the gallant Sar-
to make you knowe the great de-
e you. Shee aunfwered not (for
ermit it) saue wyth turning of her
B b 2 horse

The second Booke of the third Part

nes exceeded Phæbus raies: Euery one longed with de-
 to know what foolish Ladie that might be that so besto-
 her beautie on so deformed a Gyant. Forwards stept
 courteous Pagan, and knowing him in the Ruffet to be
 usin to him he highly honozed, was unwilling in any
 ing to moue him, and so said, your admired valour (Sir
 ght) is so highly knowen that none dares hazard his re-
 ation on the breaking of a Launce against you: If I
 y intreat, suffer me to runne on with your Companion,
 her to shew I am all in all yours, then otherwise to offend
 . Well did the haughtie Patrone vnderstand it, and al-
 he whole place heard what the Gyant had said, thereby
 ze esteaming the Ruffet Knight. The Ioust did the Lady
 maund of her beloued Lord, with feare ynough did hee
 e it her, and his shield with his soule. None in all the
 ce did mis-imagine of the knights hardinesse in the white
 ough his companion seemed of a stronger constitution:
 ut she that fetcht her Pedegree from Hercules, for a grea-
 matter did encourage her selfe, and so turning her Cour-
 with no lesse grace then her louer, they encountred with
 much furie as the god of warre could haue done. It was
 ll for the Lady to hit the Gyant on the Weuer, and bea-
 ing her launce with the vtmost of her strength (which was
 uall to any) she stricke of his helme, from his head, the
 ine whereof made him loose his owne blow: no sooner
 d it fallen, but presently the three Princes knewe him.
 There no longer lingred the gallant Brandafidell, but ta-
 ing his leaue of the Ladie (leauing her in opinion of vali-
 t) he went straight to the Theater, and leaping from his
 ast, he alighted the Ladie swift his armes, most ioyfull to
 her iellse before her lord Meridian. After deare Father,
 y her hand did the courteous Gyant lead her vp staires,
 euerie one knowing who they were, seeing Rosicler rise
 ough very weake of his last battle) they did the like to
 companie him. Along past the gentle Brandafidell saying
 am sozrie (most excellent Princesse) that bzinging such
 company

of the Mirr

company with me, to h
 wherewith I am recea
 compence thereof discha
 Princesse Floralinda, del
 for if he be the Meridian
 with the gift. By this
 couering a more fayzer
 Maye. The Prince in
 them such ceremonies a
 like ioyes expected. Wit
 Calidonian Matrone in th
 choly hartes) that I can
 on all partes, I remit i
 repeate the manners of
 uery one he did, and to
 with superfluous court
 fall into that erroz I ha
 To be short, euery on
 old King of Macedonia
 thence w his Daughter
 solōg an absence. Only
 lesse soules) pitie Claric
 fier of loue, that with h
 of discontent vnto the se
 warre of rude confused
 smyling chance lightly
 time leaue his contrari
 this instant brought hin
 y returned frō speaking
 but to see him so pensiu
 milde.

She shewed it by th
 ing downe of her eyes,
 damant could haue ind
 haue you tell mee (P
 sorowe, For I feare

Mirroure of Knighthood.

e, to her will all the content be attrib
receaued: but I am glad of it, to bee
discharged of my guaridng my Lad
da, deliuering her vnto y^e Scythian p
ridian, I belieue he will not be displ
this time had she vnmasked her face
ayze one, then Apollos in the mone
nce imbraced his espowse, vsing bett
nies as is accustomed amonge those
. With such furie behaueth her selfe
e in the listes (swæte sollaces of M
I cānot stand to rehearse these welco
mit it to your sober considerations, f
ers of y^e gentle Brandafidell, what w
d to euerye one did say were to inl
courtesies the breuitie of the Vistor
I haue already condemned.

ery one returned to their places, excep
onia who with the Emperors leaue, v
ghter to know what had befallen he
Only (sweet Ladies comforts of com
Claridiano burning in the vnconsur
with his Ladies coyneſſe added the fe
the selfe nozishing flames of y^e reason
fused thoughtes. The fauour of
htly in such accidents as these doth s
trarious maleuolence, and so fortun
ht him to meet with the Queene of L
aking to the Macedonian ladie, & no d
ensue and for her sake shee became

by these woordes, but with such a h
yes, that I knowe not what heart o
e indured it. Merie gladly wo ul
(Prince of Grecia) the cause of
eare your euill doth procede of

the third Part

ere, and chose her selfe
 swifter then any Au-
 her Courser she ranne
 e her did the like. Fiue
 ere aduantage was

them they might runne
 med to incounter wyth
 de all the scaffoldes in
 . Her stirroppes and
 fayne with the vtmost
 e necke, which was
 fault befoze her deare
 was shee glad, when
 her aduersarie on the
 some aduantage fallen
 ade her altogether lose
 er celebzated her victo-
 ng bpp and downe her

as out of patience to
 quame, went to her
 fe, in a disguised habit
 the Cittie. She had
 umming towarde her
 on, mightily mounted

The manner of their
 ll courage. The war-
 ourtesie kept to them

no meane fauour that
 nes the Iustes, you
 nd though in mee there
 er valours may coun-
 yed one of them whose
 minuerse) your gallant
 pzeſence

of the Mirrour of Knihgthood.

preſence binds vs to graunt your request, for rather then
 by we are they that receaue ſpeciall honour with your ſo-
 etie. This kinde reply highly pleaſed the Lady more then
 befoze eſteeming the knights for it. Then this, nothing
 more illuſtrateth a Prince. Thus this meſſe of choiſe wa-
 riors began to approach vnto the Citie, they delighting
 exceedingly in the diſguiſed Ladies conuerſation, & wee
 ioyfull, of their braue company. She diſcourſt to the the a-
 cidents befallen in the Juſtes, and howe it was thought
 two preſent maintayners would winne the prizes, for the
 ſheir valour witneſſed no leſſe, being thitherto, by none d-
 priued of y hope. Memorable matters about this time ha-
 pened. For to the place ware arriued two knights who
 hawghty ſemblance drew on themſelues the ſpectators eie
 He on the right hand was all in a ſanguine armour of fine
 rubies, intermingled with ſome greene Emeraldes y ma-
 niſcentlye it adozned him. His deuſe on his ſhield was
 knight and a Lady, that ſeemed to giue her portrayture v-
 to her gallant, in whoſe exchange ſhee receaued his.
 fayrer thinge was neuer ſcene, for being ſet with ſtones
 ineſtimable value, & the Sunne reuerberating thereon
 dazled euery eye. Betwene the two Louers was this po-
 ſie which ſeemed to proceede from the Ladie.

*No faith was ere ſo ſure,
 But fortune it myght croſſe:
 By ſome vn hoped loſſe.*

Euery one praiſed the knights inſcription iudging hi
 for a perfect Louer, that for all he was aſſured of his Lad-
 yet hee aſſigned himſelfe to liue amongſt all the ioalouſes
 The armes of his companion were to his in ſhow and ed-
 mation nothing inferiour. They were of a deepe red floz

r there
our soci
oze then
nothinge
se war
ting ex
ee most
e the ac
ought y
foz their
none de
me hap
s whose
oys eies.
of finell
y mag
was a
ture vn
his. A
tones of
ereon it
his poe

ing him
is Lady
aloufett.
and effi
ed flozi
shed

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

ched her fro her seate cleane ouer her Coursers backe, which
guided by the bzidle thzeiwe her on the earth, with slow pa-
ces did the Prince of Dacia passe along without stirroppes:
And Lirgandeo sayth that till hee well returned to himselfe,
he did not recouer them. There was nothing could be heard
in all the place, for the noise of millitarie Instruments: till
the comming of a companie of Ladies and Knightes y gaue
occasion to enioy the sight of their gallant pzeience. They
were to y number of 12 Ladies all apparelled in græn Vel-
uet, ymbzoydered with gold ttwist vpon red Taffata, bzatie-
ly mounted on white palfrayes, and their faces masked. In
the middle of them came a Ladie whose disposition denoted
her to be commandresse of the others, as the rest, she had in
a baile couered her Angelicall face, her habit was of Crim-
son with many Hartechokes imbozt with stoness of infinite
estimation, her attire was of the Egyptian manner with
many foldes concluding in two ends, which fell ouer either
shoulde. A mantle of Purple veluet shee wore lyned with
Salamanderskinnes, whose facing was imbrozdered wyth
many Thousand rich Orient pearles. With them came 4
Knights whose constitution admired the beholders. Arry-
uing, two by two they past their course with such Maiestie,
that there was none but wisht them the prizes of the Jysts.
Of the first two hee on the right hande, that seemed of more
strength, was all in armoz quartered in græne and azure
with many stoness that marueilously adoꝛned it. In y mid-
dle of his shield was set the picture of Amitie, as in antient
times she was paynted in forme of thze Ladies, her in the
middle all naked, and shee on the right side, halfe conered,
and the other altogether, with this word.

Against this sacred trinitie,
No death did ere preuaile:
To massaker this dietie.

To be no lesse gallant, then amiable did the Knight ma-
nifest

The

shed all over
vnualluable
the rest, in a
beauteous La
he gazed on he
sight, his wo

Together p
dowes, where
the ground, a
bowes.

Done of all
like courtesie, i
raysed themsel
ous Floralinda,
her where they
Princede of M
thoughts ancho
vnquiet stormes
dell out of your
dies, brings wi
so straight they
selues with the
companie braue
I shoulde forget
Ladies keeper,
Princede for it. In
to heare their ch
supposing that b
haue sufficiently
(so openly they sh

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

the Greeks, wth this imagination they terminated all their
desires rather to remaine enemies to Greece, then sonnes
of Miridian: As in truth both they were being Don Celyna-
do and Floraliza, that parting from the haughtie Tynacri-
on they arryued in the Cittie to make knowne their valour.
They turned their horses to the listes against the maintay-
ers, and the furious Lady thus sayd. The time is so short
for a knight to Just considering how many expectes it, that I
have thought it good that in the open field (seeing wee are
sure, two to two, we trie the favour of the changing God-
desse. For that matter as you please sir Knight (replyed
the Rolamond) for we are onely here to perfoyme what ere
demanded vs. Now you see (sir Knight sayde Don Ce-
lyndo) that our Justing being without the listes our battle
with the swordes is not prohibited. Not far from thence was
the gallant Eleno that not a little ioying thereat replyed. I
receaue (sir Knights) how by little and little you haue ex-
posed to vs your mindes challenging vs with so many Cir-
cumstances, which indeede were needelesse, for by plainely
saying wee had made answered with going into the field.
Great is the confidence you haue of your valour (sayde Don
Celyndo.) Not so much (replyed Don Eleno) as is your pre-
sumption, to demaund in triumphs what none else hath done.
There them stood the braue Astorildo of Calidonia brother to
Rolamond with Hercules shield, for onely foure were
good in the place. The Ladie knewe him well, for she
late had made him list wypp his Beuer. And so because
she would not take hers from whence it was, she deman-
ded the Judges if according to the Greeke lawes, she might
haue a shield befoze the beginning of any particuler quar-
rell: who answering thee might, made no moze a doe but
went to her brother and in her language said. May it please
the braue Prince to lend me your shield, for wth such a fauor
doe not doubt, but my enterprize will haue a happie ende.
Thee spake it in her language and somewhat highe, the
gallant

The second Booke of the third Par

nifest himselfe, for hee was that Gracious Oristoldo
of Anuoch: the other was the valiant Tartarian Zoyl
armes were of an Indian colour with starres of gold
his shield the Image of distrust with this Motto.

After a tedious grieve,

Commeth a sweete reliefe,

That all distrust abandons,

And all the world does win.

They went vnto the Ladies standing, giving the
the flower of armes and beautie, Rosabell and the
chishlora Queene of Lyra. The halughtie youth had
best armor of the world of cleane fine tempered Steele
with flowers of diuers colours made with pectious
in such artificiall manner that no hart could more
azure field vpon his shield was portrayed a herie
and within it a Ladie, who carried away perforce
forth her arme vnto a knight that stood on a banck
the Sea Coast, that he should succore her, with this
tion on his behalle.

Onely fortune may remoue thee,

From this hart that thee adores,

Which in darknesse now still thrones,

Wanting the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

Wanted the Sun-shine of thy beautie.

They turned about prawning till they came

to the

ighthood.

With his deare Oliuia
tailed the losse of their
and the Sonne to his
nce our company hath
lent Prince) that it
es : And so for that
o long acknowledged
beseech you to tell vs
ice that was impres-
member, & therefore
e. These triumphes
ies, for their gallan-
s in of celebrating
st, though I am sure
d it selfe vpon intrea-
speake vnto mee, for
alone with some con-
e would stay, and so
the Prince felling his
who with infinit sobs
eir lost Sonne. What
for I feare in this I
and Archiflora with
he end thereof
them all.
uently harness to me,
ayly golde progresse
enjoy the battle of the
in arms, he stated his
heir proud vnbidled
ace of Greece, which
at

The second Booke of the third Part

gallant Astorildo thought it was his sister, and in this with great liberalitie he gaue it her saying. All my weayons and my selfe Sir knight are for euer at your maund, for your voice bindes me to more then this: faith it gets immortall honoz by the change: without ceremonies the Ladie humbled her selfe, yet said that the Iusts she would speake with him which was a taking of his doubt. From him went the beauteous Ladie deliuering to her Lord his owne shield. If at any (faire Distresse, to whome my soule hath vowed full obedience) I had extreame need of your fauour in the present wherein my Fortune hath put me in to do such famous Iusts as in Constantines great Citie were held. None stirred, with dumbe silence euery one at the end of the swift Carrier of the foure Worthies Fortune seemed to fauour Don Celindo, that seemed should loose by the match it might be at Rosamonds that with more furie then the fierie Comet rent the cloudes she met him. In the place was not the least a greater noise then in their closure they made, but their launces with such ease as if they were of Canes so knockt each other with their shieldes and helmes that the ground out of his saddle did Don Cellindo finde with the bridle in his hand, with more remembrance (though on foote) then the Ladie had on horse back holding by his necke hauing lost both raynes and stirrups he past forward with such furie, that it was a wonder he not leape out of the Lists: she recovered her selfe almost at the mightie blowe; a greater than it was not giue the Iusts. Euerie one agreed in the strength of the combaters: But the praises wherewith the popularitie of the two Louers, may not easilie be credited: For the Dacian with incomparable strength encountred the Ladie in the middest of her amorous breast: he did not wouche for that honoz was only reserued for Cupid to triumph in her captiue life: yet he met her with such rigour, that

at the
some
affe
full
to p
not
non
win
whi
woz
wer
thei
the l
Por
moz
(thi
with
do w
whi
turn
look
blad
othe
The
red f
that
cian
the g
place
that
blow
excee
ward
berle
on hi
Defen

The second Booke of the third Part

at this time according to the ecchoing noise therein it seemed some generall battle was fought; for the vulgar comunalty affecting y^e new aduēturers w^{ch} confused voyces made doubt, full the combates successe. I shall not neede (swēte Ladies) to pray your attentioⁿ, for this war being for beauty, I shold not perswade you to it: yet being needy in witt, and hauing none, but with laborious toyle. Whats drawen frō the flowing current of your fauours I must still imploze it, without which in a swēt & pleasant stile ill canne I paynt forth with wordes, such amorous, (though rigorous) blowes as heere were giuen. The two warlike louers opposed themselues in their Carrier while the Mirror of beauty & her cōpanion did the like. They prickt forth swifter then an aerie thought. None mist the incounters, for rather they were made with more horroz, then the roaring Baseliskes do make. They passe (shiuering their launces in a thousand pieces) by each other, with such grace, that loue himselte they inamored, setting do wne also principles of war, for y^e mighty God of battles, which he seemed not to disdaine euen in his fist thzone. They turned about, but with such fury that the farthest remooued looker on trembled at the view. They drew forth the best blades in the world, & the two louers closed to wound each other, but there swords frō their armes rebounded vppwards. Their dexteritie inwards disliked them, supposing it impaired their valour, so they seconded their blows wth such wrath that their heads kist their saddle bowes. Longer had y^e Dacian vsed his weapons, and was by nature couragious: but the gallant Britanian youth admits no comparatiue, for al y^e place admired his ligeritie. Againe they ioyned, astonished that their swords did not cut. Aloft offered the Greeke his blow hauing an eye still at his ayne, & as his strength was exceeding in the middest of his race he stayed, turning it inwards, and discharging it, he made him see a number numberlesse of stars doubling him vpon his horse back. At large on his brest he gaue him another, that had not Brutes armes defended him hee had enlarged his imprisoned soule. A rane

of the

ning Tygre noz
uer seen moze fur
ing his enimie
after another tha
hym so sozylie h
side his shielde,
a counterbuffle,
he willingly wo
Greece been witi
of their blowes,
a larger Chapter
dies) to tell you
who like mounta
turned with thei
Lyra, for Rosamo
uerse, for which
halse of her skele
did she not speed,
much blood throu
per: she seconded
force, she had no
her shield where
fall so tormented
with a point, wh
her reuenge that
the helme, she son
mortally wound
skele seemes so
highest D:bes p
racles in defens
thrust the Callid
On the out side s
making the furio
place had thoug
mond: whereup
parted without p

ning

The second Booke of the

Flowers both for his valour and court
es helpe him, so driving Rosamond
ng with her horse shee assaulted Do
She got little by it, for the Dacian
ger than shee, and mounted on that
ing to make her bow vnto his brest
her at her entring: and as she arose
d between his hands) did let it flie a
auen defended her, for else (so rigorou
ad been parted in two. All the corner
k alway, he wounded her on the sho
t band of her helme, with part of her
e her tremble like an aspen leafe. A
donian Ladie, and betweene them
e her: but she staied her sword thinki
d any with aduantage. By this was
to himselfe making against them.
Ladie, but with him shee could get n
ges they were vnequall: he let flye
onet such a blow, that she thought
ument. Like to a rauening Tygre she
word, whose inchauntment being m
t, there is no defence in *Hectors* shield
e cast to the earth. She came with an
arded it fearing the sword, else had
e it extreamely opprest him. In hir
ous Lord seeing so mightie enemies
laie, his shield he hurles at his back
es hee reacht her, (though not at fu
e, it, next to the deuine powers sat
addle bowes it had otherwise diuid
or feeling it cast her vppon them, v
dance of blode through her helme, a
about the field on her horse. O Don
feele, seeing the thing thou most loue
h danger: Against *Oluias* sonne he

the third Part

courtesie. She would
 and with a point apart
 ed Don Eleno to wound
 acian was nimbler, and
 that Courser, it was
 zest with the blowe hee
 rose (he still hanning the
 flie at her: the powers
 igozous was the blow)
 corner of the shield was
 e shoulder, and cut the
 of her necke peece, and
 ase. Then arrived the
 them they hadde surely
 hinking it cowardise to
 s was the furious youth
 hem. Besoze him stept
 get nothing, for in all
 flye at the toppe of her
 ight she sawe the flarrie
 gre she raysted her aunti-
 ing made long afoze any
 s shield, for a peece ther-
 ith another at his head,
 e had he fared ill, never-
 n himselfe was not the
 emies: impatient is hee
 is backe, and with both
 t at full) vppon her rich
 rs saued her life, for to
 Divided her: without
 em, voyding infinite a-
 ne, and was carried a-
 Don Eleno what didst
 t lovedst in the world
 ne he cast himselfe who
 trusting

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

trusting to his Bollador stayed to receave him, but hee m
 with the Dacians Tyrio that almost had overthowne th
 both, he made him set his buttocks on the ground. The
 lour and admirable bountie of the warriours had suspend
 the iudgment of euery one, not knowing on whether par
 decline, not daring so much as mutter, fearing to lose
 sight of some notable blowe that might be giuen. When
 furious Callidonian Dame, recovered her selfe shee wou
 haue confronted him that had indangered her. Shee left
 doubting to displease her beloued Lord. And therefore
 turned all her wozathfull furie on the famous Quene of
 ra: who seing her come, did not leaue to expect her w
 doubt of her accursed blade. She came with such eager
 that her blowe was not woorthy the giuing, but rather
 Quene vnwilling to lose that occasion, as shee past w
 both handes layde at her shoulder. It was a good blow
 the end, because it cut all the buckles of her helme on y
 She returned ashamed to haue mist her stroake, and wi
 all her force with moze aduise strucke at her shield. Thi
 defence against the cutting swoord, for cleane a sunder
 was dyuided, doing the like with the pointe on her bzeft,
 little wounding her arme. From her did y warlike Quee
 cast the remaynder of her shield, and discharged the fury
 her armes on her helme which at one side lose. So much
 wayghed downe on the other, that she strucke it, from h
 head couering the white armour, of her moze whiter sho
 ders with goulden framells of Amber haire. Moze say
 lookes not Apollo when hee beautifies the world with t
 Easterne vprise in y mozne, or in his pride within his mi
 day course, the did y lady seme without her pzeious helm
 All the field was in an vproare to see so faire a Lady and
 valiant.

It not grieved her to be without helme, for with bo
 handes shee strucke the Quene on her visor. It ma
 her a small wound, but the payne was greater, whi
 gaue Rosamond leaue as swift as an Eagle to close wi

The second Booke of the th

Quene seeing her chance, and amazed at
of her aduersaries sword, with all her stren
a blow that made her make a thousand si
and altogether she had ouerthrowne her bu
the cruell slicing blade. She procured to hel
her dexteritie: but it little auailles her, for
domian Ladie be short winded, & her face w
besmeared with blood: yet euery time she re
both the armour and the most fairest skinn
did know. O Claridiano, who should approu
newes, that the blood which thou most adoz
the smallest grasse? Ouerwhelmed in the s
thoughts was the Loue-burning youth, t
crueltie hee was entreated by his Ladie,
heard, nor saw what in the field was done.
the beauteous English Artemisa, who see
pensiuenes pluckt him by the arme with th
how now (excellent Prince) is it possible t
my lone should so estrange you: if you plea
your greefe with me, receauing it to ease y
be my content: and in faith it is no small pa
ceauie to see you in these passions. As scō a s
ked, did the afflicted youth looke vp, and he
beauteous Lady had offered, made this re
humble kisse your Soueraigne handes (n
Princesse) for the fauour done me, in pitt
dure, yet is it but a small comfort: for in t
ner hath crueltie plasht it selfe (to my mo
place, and my thoughts in another labou
uing dutie (setting apart all other things) t
one death, a momentarie remedie for a lon
life. Why then be assured (said the Lady)
of Loue is made gentle being tollerated, a
fed with one that will, like my selfe ride
things (replied the luckfull Louer, hath sh
me, animating my weakenes by so on high

the third Part

ed at the cutting edge
strength she gaue her
and signes of falling,
her but that she feared
to helpe her selfe with
r, for though the Cali-
face within her helme
she reacht her, she cut
skinne that the world
approch thee with such
t adorest doth enamell
the studie of confused
ith, to see with what
adie, that hee neither
done. Ward by him sat
ho seeing him in such
ith these wordes, why
Tible there should be a
u please to participate
ease you therof, it wil
all paine what I con-
co a slepe newly awa-
nd hearing what that
his replie. I doe most
es (most Soueraigne
in pittying what I int
2 in the strangest ma-
e more plague) in oue
laboured in their strin-
ings) to procure at once
2 a long and painfull
ady) that this frense
ted, and communicat-
dde you of it. In all
ath Fortune fauoured
high sublimating my
hopes,

Of the Mitrou

hopes: only it hath giuen n
greatest euill that could be, I
by a constant faith, to reuea
though well considered, it is
cause thereof, the present at
that my torments are too eat
So haue I chose in my barga
though your noble offer shall
duties of my loue: why then
nye more neede to importun
your griefes. But for this
on the battaile of yon foure li
doth not containe. Your high
he) for they that are newe com
is the soonest in assaulting, I
houes him combating with a
his battle, as hee in the Rus
gladly knowe his companion
what the others strength can
interrupted: for Rosabell thin
le shoulde so longe last in pr
stormes of hayle threwe his b
which breathlesse made him a
wastling would the Dacian be
ing thereby to get more aduanc
reaued his intent suffered him
with all his strength thrust at
his armes harnessse, he wound
he had toucht the harts side, b
outwards, and becomming me
casting his shield at his backe,
ted his sword and discharged it
gallant loue, it strucke him sen
his helme full of blood which ran
better blow was not giuen in al
ted by y gallant Quene, that n

The second Booke of the third Part

her and with great strength and speed snatcht at hers, that when she awaked she was without it, amazed to see themselves in that manner. Every one applauded with praises the Ladies battaile who askeard to hurte one another helde themselves fast imbraced with their armes, that I knowe not what hart would not ioy to be bound with such gyues. The Combatants were astonished at the success, but Rosabell most of all with the sight of Rosamond, thinking he looked on his deare Liriana: either of them woulde goe to aid his partener, but the Dacian that was assured of his Ladies strength, disturbed him from it by casting his armes about his necke: every one that was looking from the windowes, descended. Don Claridiano from the toppe of the scaffold to the ground didst thou thinke it a long iourney? With a sudden amazement did the sight of his Ladie assault him, and seeing her in that danger, the swiftnes of a towring Faulcon is slow to his, for not knowing what he did, with a leape hee iumpt downe to the ground, making no kinde of sinister motion thereat, which admired both Ladies and beholders, and went straight to the warlike Matrones. Well did Rosabell note it, iudging it for a strange acte. By this was the Nobilitie coming to them, so the Queene of Lyra seeing the Emperour, said, for this time faire Ladie, canne wee not end our battaile: but we shall not want another time to doe it. When you will (replied Rosamond) for it is no reason we should thus longer continue, you being knowne in Court: so they demaunded their helmes of some that were by, and went to the Knights intreating them to giue ouer, which they presently accorded to. The Emperour then arrived: for Claridiano, hauing bethought him on what hee had done, was rather sorry for it, and that it should not be noted he went to Don Eleno, his beautie both the Dacian and Rosabell admired; whom he intreated to leave the battaile. Seeing our friends haue so done (braue Sir replied Rosabell) we cannot but heere make an end.

They went straight to the Emperour that imbraced Archi-

chilora

188
of
chilora wit
shall neuer c
sence you ha
rill.

There is
Combating
ceeding from
us knowe w
she will not
kinge. By t
ning of Clari
ting off his
knees prostra

I haue (n
your disgrace
seech your pa
cept and com
presentlie did
derly with m
king him bpp
(good Couze
much I shou
salued it, wi
you and your
that should be

I beseech y
Princesse of
he had so sayd
him to require
would not com

She that ha
ought of dueti
honour that n
other. A cor
will be) I wou

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

with such wordes. In faith (gallant Ladie) I
neuer cease my complaintes of you, seeing in my pre-
sence you hazarded your deare person in such manifest per-

There is none (most mightie Monarch replied shee)
fighting with so haughtie a Dame, whose blowes pro-
ceed from her handes, were easie to be suffered. Let
me knowe who she is (said the Emperour,) for I hope
I am not so wrong vs, as to goe away without speake.
By that time all the rest came thither accompa-
nyed with Claridiano: Being neere together Don Eleno put
off his Helme went to the Emperour, and on his
knees prostrated said.

O most mightie Monarch) so feared to fall into
your grace, that I must (ere I am commaunded) be-
seech your pardon, and also intreate your Highnes to ac-
cuse and commaund mee as one of your owne Sonnes:
For he did the Grand Trebatio knowe him, and ten-
times with moze than an Uncles loue imbracing and fa-
uouring byppe, said: Considering how you angred mee
(your Cousen) in the Kingdome of Cimarra, it were not
fit that I shoulde continue so still: But you haue so well
repaired it, with honouring at this time our Court, both
as your companion, that a farre greater fault then
I could be forgiven you.

Then hee beseech your Maiestie (sayde hee) to speake vnto the
Emperour of Callidonia, that is here present. So soone as
he sayde she had unlaced her helme, kneeling before
him to require the kissing of his handes. The Emperour
did not consent it, but doing her like courtesie said.

What hath them so admirable (Souveraigne Lady)
that duetie require this of all the earth: For thys
that my Court receaiveth could not come from no
other. I content hath this been so great, which (for it
I would haue Fortune water it but with some smal

third Part

respect it. But let
 those what the Hea-
 the shall I in all thinges
 neede to march towarde
 fidel Ladies, receaued
 him ad hand in hand w
 Croneroz. Great vary
 nothether of the Dames
 gaueond, for being som
 swo seemed moze to flo
 of hefections bewitched
 the h Rosabell put of his
 strugreat Emperour,
 great By that was Ros
 madinking him to be
 Calli
 Saint perfozme the pro
 offenu departed, I am
 comready to obay you
 the h the knight (poin-
 thingends) to whome I
 burgnlesse it be in
 firmaso to doe. Re.
 ent the Dor. toz here
 other. Light went they
 of the from thence, first
 he woulde remaine at
 thele silueras sake, be
 amozginning were fa
 of dellaridiana, Olivia,
 hand
 helm lauded, and with
 the swere all couayde
 sence great Wall their
 bounyitie doth not Lir
 way a the Ladies with
 thou
 in sue

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

their newe come guest, most of whome remayne
 of her beautie. So when they were all quyet,
 newe and faythfull friendes, Rosabell the Tartar
 ristoldo with the beauteous Tigliaffa, went to
 Emperour, and their dueties done, Lirianas cour
 uer thus began.

Comming some fewe dayes since (most mighty
 vnto thy Court through fame of her greatnesse
 Countries, my Fortune brought mee vn^d an
 ment where the Ladye, and knight (an
 rare) were, bereaued of their naturall powers,
 uozed with the vtmost of my pow^r, (though in
 ture I shoulde loose my selfe. I procure his li
 the ende it pleased the Em^p, that I (yet with
 bour) should enfranchise them, hauing done,
 ted the to tell me who they were. They answe
 being of such remoted parts could
 them. Orthelesse they promised to doe it here
 e. In recompence whercof I offered them n
 tie: and seing we are arryued to this passe, may
 thy mightinesse I may (by thy commaunde) kno
 for I must without delay depart. Were the gal
 ended together with his air. All duetie, expectin
 perours answere, who contented with the kn
 hauour, replied. Hee that hath reuied so
 worke at your handes (sir knight) will not
 as deny you who he is.

So in faith (answered the Tartare) for he tha
 is indebted as my selfe, with hazarding my life I
 to acknowledge the beginning of my gratitude
 was the Ladie vnmasked, and the three valia
 ours without helmes: Besides himselfe was the
 seeing the Tartare louing him as any of his sonns.
 ced him shedding some teares of ioy, and said, Wza
 the Traytoz that kept you so long from vs, did no
 you as I doe. The Emperour was not suffered

ood.

mayned enuious
quyet, the three
Tartare, and O-
nt towarde the
s couragions

mighty (march)
esse from far
an inchaun
aning the Tar-
wers, I indea
ugh in the ven
his libertie. In
with some la
done, I intrea
swered, that yf
could not know
here in thy pre
hem my compa
, may it please
knowe them,
e gallant youth
pecting the Em-
e knightes be
so great good
ill satisfie you

e tha. So greatly
life I doe. Gre
tude. Alread
baliant warri
the Emperour
uns he imbza
Braue Prince
id nothing loue
fered to speake
any

oke of the third Part

He will not respect it. But let
 ee must not loose what the Hea-
 n where you will I in all thinges
 do they began to march towarde
 he way the two Ladies, receaued
 r Royalties, and hand in hand fo-
 lowed the Emperour. Great vary-
 opularitie whether of the Dames
 lined to Rosamond, for being som-
 white and red seemed moze to flo-
 enes grane perfections bewitched
 hitherto had not Rosabell put of his
 glad to see that great Emperour,
 Grande-father. By that was Ros-
 weake, who thinking him to bee
 d.

(night) you must perforce the pro-
 eake to vs ere you departed, I am
 e alwaies most ready to obey you
 ut yonder stands the knight (point-
 oyed to se his friends) to whome I
 ace my helme, vlesse it be in pre-
 he will haue it so to doe the like.
 her of the supposed Sonne) for here
 e your content. Straight went they
 at stode not farre from thence, first
 of the Iustes shoulde remaine at
 ng. They for Rosilueras sake, be-
 ies that in the beginning were sa-
 hes they were Claridiana, Oliuia,
 h admiration applauded, and with
 of Busicke they were all couayde
 g arryued in the great Wall their
 newe whose prolixitie doth not Lin-
 what past among the Ladies with
 their

of the Mirrour of Knighthood

their newe come guest, most of whome rema-
 of her beautie. So when they were all qu-
 newe and saythfull friendes, Rosabell the Ta-
 ristoldo with the beauteous Tigliaffa, went
 Emperour, and their dueties done, Lirianas c-
 uer thus began.

Comming some fewe dayes since (most mig-
 vnto thy Court through fame of her greatnes
 Countries, my Fortune brought mee vnto
 ment where the Ladye, and knight (mean-
 tare) were, bereaued of their naturall pow-
 uozed with the vtmost of my power, (thoug-
 ture I shoulde loose my selfe) to procure hi-
 the ende it pleased the Gods, that I (yet
 bour) should enfranchise them, hauing dor-
 ted the to tell me who they were. They an-
 they should, I being of such remoted parts co-
 them, neuerthelesse they promised to doe it he-
 sence. In recompence whercof I offered them
 me; and seing we are arryued to this passe,
 thy mightinesse I may (by thy commaunde)
 for I must without delay depart. Were the
 ended together with his awefull duetie, erpe-
 perours answere, who contented with the
 hauour, replied. Wee that hath receaued
 worke at your handes (sir knight) will not so
 as deny you who he is.

So in faith (answered the Tartare) for he
 is indebted as my selfe, with hazarding my li-
 to acknowledge the beginning of my gratitu-
 was the Ladie vnmasked, and the three va-
 ours without helmes: Besides himselfe was
 seing the Tartare louing him as any of his son-
 ced him shedding some teares of ioy, and said,
 the Traytor that kept you so long from vs, di-
 you as I doe. The Emperour was not suffi-

hood.

remayned enuious
all quyet, the three
the Tartare, and O-
went towarde the
anas couragions lo

ff mighty Monarch)
atnesse, From far
vnto an inchaun-
(meaning the Tar-
powers, I indea-
though in the ven-
ure his libertie. In
yet with some la-
g done, I intrea-
y answered, that yf
rts could not know
e it here in thy pre-
d them my compa-
asse, may it please
nde) knowe them,
e the gallant youth
, expecting the Em-
the knightes be-
aued so great good
not so ill satisfie you

or he that so greatly
my life I doe desire
ratitude. Alreadie
ee valiant warri-
was the Emperour
is sonns he imbra-
said, Braue Prince
s, did nothing loue
t suffered to speake
any

any mo
who mi
what Ol
him eue
doft his
an Cag
grauetie

Oh d
hearts b
was all
Roscler
which w
rou th
him abo
was not
tent wa
his Son
that wor
disguise
so bzaue
returne
then this
these ne
hon thus

Noth
cellent
maintay
uantage
plyed. I
for an ere
this Cor
haue don
to redress
are conte
business t
(deuene)

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

fault and thereby merit some disfauour: answered the fearefull Prince: Neuerthelesse, had any of them been commanded to it, no doubt but some would haue ioyed to spill their dearest lyfe vnder that behest. That (sayde shee) had not been meritorious, For the Ladye requiring it shee shoulde buy it at too high a rate. The haughtie Archifilora saw him amazed, so she went to that with Rosamond, whome shee greatly affected, leauing the Prince in an obscure darknes, whose maladie seemed dayly more and more to increase, by the fading of his hopes. In his pensiues leaue wee him a while, to giue some ease vnto an easelesse spirit, that wyth fresh courage it may set downe in y next Chapter what farther happened.

CHAP. XVII.

What happened in Court amonge the Princes: and how
Don Elena departed, with other successes.



With some content it may bee, (your perfections swete beauties Mirrors) haue with patience borne the bloody Iustices of Grecia: And the cause of them being a iealous passion, there is none, that knowing howe good it is to bee estranged from himselfe,

should rest discontented: For that affection fired in a constant brest, cannot bee called Loue, vnlesse dispising all other fayrenesse, it onely accompteth of his imployment, imagining that if there bee any happynesse on earth, tis that he soly doth adore.

This conceypte hadde bereft the Greeke Prince of his best sences, seeing the coynesse and with what disdaine Archifilora vsed him, intertayning all other gallantes in the Courte wyth farre greater signes of affection, then him.

This

The

discontent, t
to the C
uen, haue
obay your
the Theater
each other as
out their hel
aunce was a
were sayres
thing young
rish on her,
euery vnder
helme, thou
whome he a
ficer come,
his deare S

Now is t
mise you ma
(answered
(most excell
ting to the
gaue my w
sence of all
Be it so (re
will we all
to the Roya
agreeing th
the two La
stowed ther
uozers

R. Cuera, a

This de
the noyse o
out of the
receauinge
gandeo set

Knighthood.

ildes assurance of the ouer-
d will lose nothing (sayd
little he doth suffer. Then
ent Duæne) of his life, y
with his discontent, which
it is a meanes to moue his
im.

Empresse Briana called the.
he bould Page thrust y let
he could not chose but take
eue it seing her somewhat
red to withdraue into her
ousand times shee was a-
contents: but considering
she opened it, whose effect

ter to

4.

a, excellent Queene of Ly-
h. A thousand meanes most
ght, by some one to make
with what certaintie hourly
ming of my death, and that
le wold not assu. thee, thou
resolved to imboulden my
whose imagination, & she
hty and all-wondring hāds,
ed to speak for the harts, &
, not obtayning it in lyfe,
griefe, will bee short. I in-
ue mee, this merits not so
orcelesse crnelty is not al-
, you wil be pleased to ad-
ruice, suffering my lāguish-
ment

The second Booke of the third

This was occasion to put him in no other
he was in, for as his thoughts were his only
they imployed in such high contemplations, he
fortunes of his loue to that passe, that he man
rant tokens of the same, losing the rose at colour
shunning the conuersation of all his friends &
who in nothing more than in pastimes busied
All the Court did note it, and some that woul
selues his friends, required of him the cause o
tent: he denied it to them all, for none loued b
crecie. A deede most meritorious for his Lady
him: But she was so free, that to continue it,
loued him as her selfe) she would neuer let him
so thence forwarde, the opportunitie that occa
ted him she would disappoint, by choosing for
companie, which was a new kinde of toyme
dome for the afflicted Prince. He took coun
longer to dissemble) with the Countie of Acan
youth wittie and discreet called Palisandro, to
closed his griefes, whose repetition seemed to e
his squire comforted him the best he could, sa
that age it was so common to be alienated
meanes was found therein to suffer any crosse
him to consider, w^h what troubles his Father
noly to his cost, but of al Greeces, & that he sho
could be no pleasure, with a desired end, vnl
thereto were difficult and vnpleasant, for the
ward of the thing procured, making the end t
according to their value. This true good Palisan
red the Prince) yet thou knowest with what
Father was beloued: And being the cause of
cruell warres in Grecia, yet knew he not wha
in the Emperesse my mothers disgrace: And
should I demaund her for my wife, my Lord
being a mediator, I should not be denied he
are a thousand incōueniences and all to defan

nighthood.

h of my hopes, for it wil
attaine vnto the winter
of honourable actes,
and y nonage of my glozy,
th ignoble slothfulnesse; &
some remedie to quyet
fayned.

e) but that you wyte,
constantly she is loued,
noued, reading vnder so
ost firme. Oh Palifan-
ing thus with woes for
he knoweth not what.
st with effect speake in
lessenes betwene louers
is so (spake the Greeke)
hall (sayd hee) want no
Court. So they went to
then if hee went to com-
e the letter promising to
h hee indagered his life
it (oh if she would effect
uer complaine of her:)
windowe that looked to
Don Elenos were alrea-
ted with the newe ma-
nes in their talke wold
e, whose qualities the
without suspitton of any
t (sweete Quæene) but
us to languish, for his
not come from any thing
eplied the Quæene) that
es are not bound to fa-
ough they greatly loue.
e by louing that woulde
not

The second Booke of the third Part

ment. I require no pardon for louing thee, since thou by wounding the body, gauest the soule leaue to idolatrize the Instrument: but if thou wilt altogether seeme displeased in kindled wrath, my selfe will bee the executioner of the punishment I merit, killing that life the heauens gaue me, to adore thee vntill death, the which is sure in me shutting the gates of pittie & clemencie wherto thou art bound.

As manye teares as the distressed Greeke hadde shedde wryting of the Letter didde the Ladye poure downe when shee read it, for shee extreamely loued him: but her libertie so rested her, and imagiuing it diminisht her Fame not shewing her selfe grieued, she so not onely determined it but also to write it, lest her silence might giue him occasion to thinke the glory of his high thoughts was allowed. Shee writ her answer not without manye teares, and taking it with her, put it twixt her breasts, a place where *Phœbus* wisht to rest, & so without any shew of alteration she went vnto the hall, for one of her Damozels had told her, how an aduēture was come to the Pallace: which in deede was so. For when they were all in pleasing conuersation one with another, there entered a Dwarf so rowe the hall so little that hee was scarce seene, because hee brought a shielde bigger then himselfe, and the richest in the world, he went directly to *Don Elena* and kissing his hands hee gaue him a letter from *Nabato*, with his commendations, bydding him straight read that Letter for it behooued him to depart, with some alteration the *Dacian* tooke it and read it thus,

Nabatos Letter to Don Elena of Dacia.

TO the excellent Prince of Dacia, Nabato his faythfull friend, and in the Magicke artes most skilfull, health. As all my studie, is directed for thy content, I haue founde, that it behooues thee for the reasons I shall gine, presently to depart from that Court least thy delay be the cause of the deare Lyons death: It must bee onely with thy Page, and that my seruauit, that shall

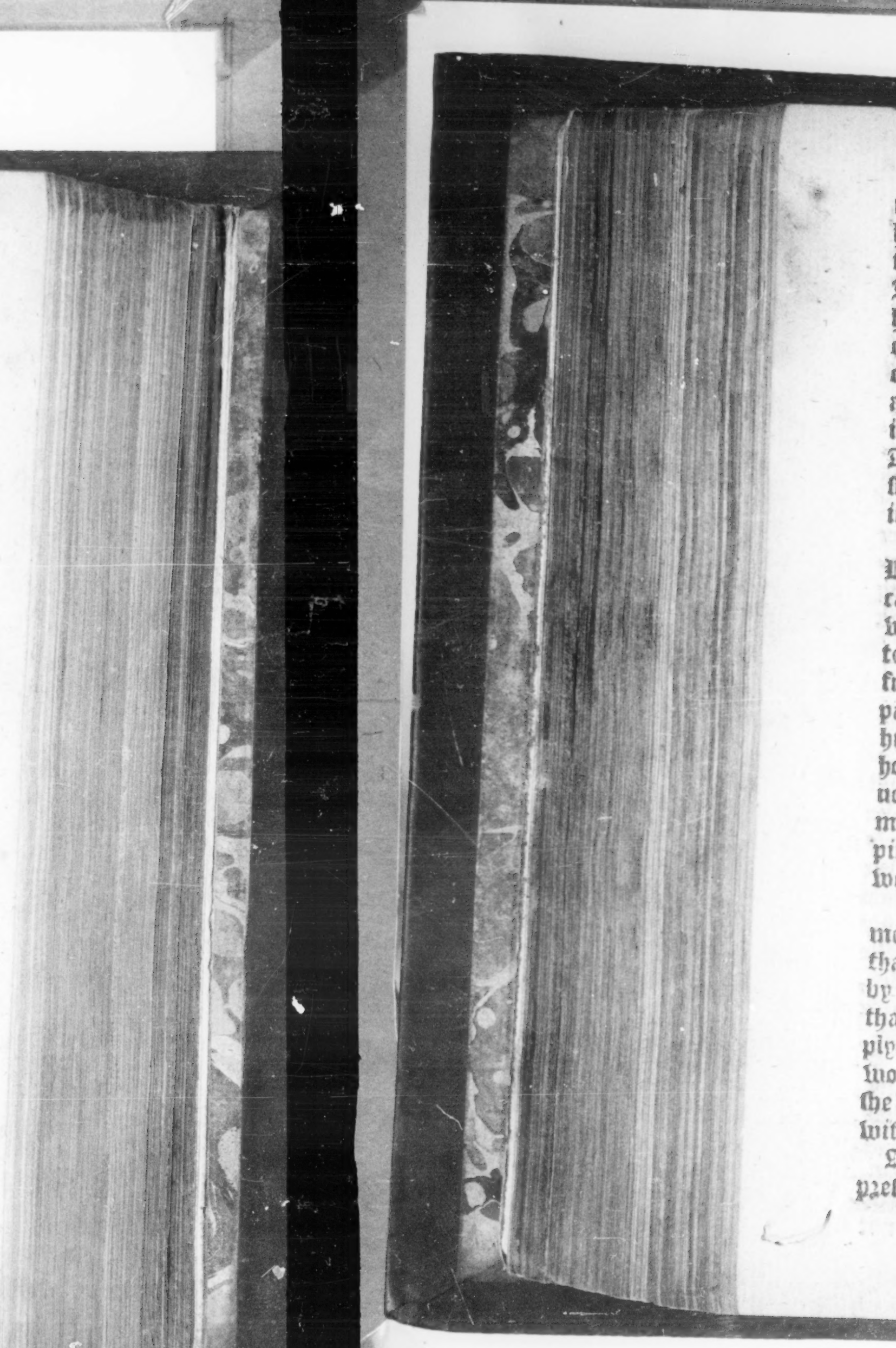
guyde

of t
guyde thee, leaue
shalbe well intre
like must the K
tioche, France,
ter so great plea
maruell if there
mortalls heard o
doth procure it.
deserueeth.

This Letter
who he was, an
ded away he w
him on with his
betwayling her
was with Chi
Dacian, but rat
Uncles Court.
Dwarfo gaue h
he would suffer
treated the Em
med her as his
Dacian. Arryui
whereinto he le
gan to rent the
what happened

Howe one n
him





The second Booke of the third Part

not remedie the thing loued seing it languish in paine: for herein is the tryall of loue, not to consent the languishing of the thing loued, although the louer in that remedie doe a Thousand times indanger his life. And considering your highnesse words, I now esteeme the Graeke Ladies as cruell as they are beautifull, for on that ground they built their crueltie, a thinge, that so much blemisheth the noblenesse y adornes them. This not so much (answered the Quene) as is their small sufferance to dissemble their Ladies copnesse. When the wary Palisandro caused to passe that waye, with slowe paces because he might be seene, who straight knowing him they called, to whom Rosamond spake..

Come hither gentle Page, it hath been told vs that your Lord Prince Claridiano wil absent himselfe from Court, because he cannot brooke so long absence: and truly hee doth well, if he thinke the sight of his Ladie will adde more content vnto his thoughts, then now he sheweth heere, flying from vs all, publishing he liues best in solitude. Of his departure I knowe nothing (answered Palisandro) sauing of his woes, as he that dayly receaueth them no lesse to see how he pines away: and I dare well affirme no knight euer loued with a more constant faith, nor none intreated w more crueltie a thing that would haue moued a Tygre to pittie: and so I thinke, yf the Ladye continue in her rygoe, we shall very shortly see him dead.

Oh God forfend it (sayd the dissembling Quene) but tell me, hath not he manifested to his Lady the sorrow & payne that nourishes him. His eyes (replyed he) are they that speak by signes. Why then (sayde Rosamond) shere is in Greece that is cause of his maladie. So farre as I haue spoke (replyed he) knowe I of his departure, life and loues: for hee would not wrong his Lady as to tell me her name, or who she is. In faith (answered the Princesse) yf his loues agree with his outward effectes he is iniustly vsed.

There is no doubt thereof (sayd he) for what the face expresseth, proceedes from the abundance that is inclosed in
a little

hood
a little
much thin to
the Du
he, I are you n
I canthe say
hath not to per
Souerae blaz
They cry bark
As they resolu
ter into sayd, h
it, least t, for in
moued. f her b
Chamby neces
bout to to him
it was depart
was thatut al

well to
it bee,
with l
To d, that
ra, ere sa
hayed f
known pathat
swanlike, seme
the maladi
onely art
selfe to my
thought it
my soule f
it, tremble
which adn
treate you
meane dese
together pe
mit me as a
ke h
arta
of t

The second Booke of

sently shall she bewaile with eternall
it bee no comfort to her) the rash re-
so seuerely, being assured with what
Shee mist not occasion, for the car-
cross the hall: shee called him saying
leue you erred in deliuering your let-
to some other Lady: So I bring it y-
not lose what from the same doth p-
ued the drift, and therefore answered
cellent Quene, I haue committed
world, publishing the secrets of my
is no such fault for though I knowe
them secret: and as for the rest nei-
any thinge with me, for tis verie
employ it in some Ladies service.

She would stave no longer, be-
fro did passe, which pleased the Pa-
good newes vnto his Lord: hee sou-
for he went not from him, and sayd
with what affection your matters
Letter, written with your Ladie
and while he ouerpast the feare of
full with attention heard all that h-
Ladies: at length he rent open the
times kissing the firme, the content

Archifloras Letter

Claridiano.

Archiflora of Lyra to the Prince
anger & grieve I did receaue with
I shoulde expresse in this, I shoulde
it, then reason to complayne mee
hauing thy selfe, not as a Knight
by insinuating, & deluding those Lad-
not of thee. With my owne hãds I wi-
that were to worke thy content, but
thou do not so much as imagine it, for

18871
e of the third Part

eternall teares, (and yet shall
sh resolution she had to write
what faith she was beloued.
e carefull Palisandro quickly
saying. Good Squire I be-
our letter, for it was written
ig it you againe, that she may
both procede, he well perceas
swered. Why then most er-
itted the greatest fault in the
of my Lord the Prince. There
nowe his loues I will keepe
it neither thou nor hee hast lost
erue common in his youth to
ice.

because of them that for and
he Page thinking hee carried
hee found him in his Chamber
sayd. That you may know
ffers are handled, reade this
Ladies hande, hee tooke it,
are of reading a thing so doubt-
hat happened betwene y two
n the seales, and a Thousand
ntents were these.

Letter to

iano.
ince Claridiano, health. If the
e with thy Letter, (bold Prince)
shoulde rather want paper for
nee of thy presumption, be-
ight, but as one that liues,
Ladies, that altogether thinke
I wil not procure my reueg for
but I aduise thee to do so again
t, for that bee the cause to drie
me

of the Mirroure of Knighthood

me to my kingdom, (only to depart from the Knight
to the death wronged me) where I will spend my li-
ing thine, that thou mayest confesse thy fault, and ack-
my much wrong.

Out of his hand did the woefull Prince let the
with a thousand cries would he publish his grieffe
feared to be heard: he would not suppe, but lay
his bedde till the middle of the night were past,
wasted with teares, & then called he for Palisandro
him on with his armour, and to make his horse re-
did it, not demanding him the cause thereof, becau-
him so discontented, he requested him to stay in Com-
ple with his Father, for he would guerdon his good
towards him: to no other thing then this would he
be perswaded. So he tooke his Journey through
fert woodes, Complaining to the heauens, with
eltie he was intreated, & not knowing whether n-
way to goe, he trauailed all night, untill by the a-
of the day he could decerne his armour, whose sight
him, seeing their murrey colour turned to yellow
with many red flames, which (though it were a pi-
quise) yet made it a gallant shew. In the middelt of
was the picture of Crueltie, as the Achayans were
paint her, with foure punniards sharpe edged on a
a knight lying at her fete with many woundes. And
this.

Oh happie one amonge so many,
That would his poore hart pierse,
In steade of ioy that craves his hearse.

He straight imagined that his father & wise Gal-
byn doing there, which was some comfort to y sorrow
for he thought y since he knew his griefes, & the cau-
y he would procure their remedies, w that good wi-
thitherto wisht his welfare, he came to y sea-side, &
shipt himselfe for Alexandria, not remembzing how hi-
kingsfolks wold lamet his departure: who knowing
not there, commanded him to bee looked for: but his p-
decl

Second Booke of the third Part

ed Zoylo) then that. And so because I will not
in the Prince the Heauens hath giuen them,
ed, with what my deare wife hath. For An-
r a farre greater recompence deserues, with
ayses euery one applauded that haughty deede
, proceeding from the magnanimitie of a Po-
ere we leaue them, hauing much to dilate.

CHAP, XIX.

woods of *Grecia* happened to the valiant *Sar-*
cia with her beloued *Oristides*, and
how she slayed there.

A small is not the faith, and beautye of the
faire *Sarmacia* (swete Ladies) but her per-
ticuler affection maye deserue a particuler
Chapter: who though she had wonne little
in the Iustes, yet esteemed she moze to bee
ridde of her iealous feare, since she was as-
adie was that hadd so daunted her, making
ne iealous then amorous. With millions of
e left the Citie, penitent of what vnwitting-
hed against her gallant. She put her selfe
the woods, resolued to wander thereabouts
ere moze quieter, for she was sure *Oristides*
t him selfe thence, being greatly esteemed of
Trebizound, and of Greece, who determin-
an honourable charge in his Kingdome of
him the Title thereof. This not a little ioy-
hee might so, well marrie him, obtayning
hty friendes.

from her horse, letting him feede on y greene
ut off her helme, washing her face, & drinke
of a cleere spring whose bracke ranne all a-
assing the night in pleasant imaginations,
soulded

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

foulded in the good and euill of Loue. None in so short time
loued so dearely, nor none with more occasion became so iea-
lous, as she with that litle she conceaned by Floralinda. She
arrpyed to that point, that Lirgandeo sayth she attayned the
name of a firme Louer, amonge those that most deserued to
be so called. She was affected to the Harmonie of concoz-
dant voyces hauing speciall grace in that vertue. So lea-
ning against a Myrtle tree she began, rayling her voyce vn-
to the Cloudes, in this manner.

*That greefe which loue doth yeelde,
If he can loue that hath it,
Accompts it his foode mite:
To make his paine more milde.*

*None ere that truely lou'd,
Resting on it his life,
Though loue he calls his strife:
From it would be remou'd.*

*He is not a true louer,
That cannot indure his paine,
And knowing tis no disdaine:
That takes't not for a fauor.*

*This is a louer rare,
That thinkes his paine no smart,
Then knowes not his good hart:
The meaning of despaire.*

*For if he liue by louing,
The grieffe his soule sustaines,
He calls it his true gaines:
Ioy to his paine still yeelding.*

The second Booke of the third Part

the manner of his going, not suffering him to goe in his company, alledging he went in search of his Uncle Don Eleno. This some what quieted them, yet not in such manner that being knowen vnto the Queene of Lyra, and how through her meanes he was absented, but that her sorrowe exceeded the boundes of comfort. A thousand times was she about to follow him, had shee not feared to haue been noted for it. She left it for another time, passing her life in continuall laments deseruedly, seing she would not (only to shew her selfe cruell) liue a sweet and pleasant life, in her Louers companie. She could not so close couer her griefe, but Rosamond at length plainely perceaued it, and seing she knewe it, did confesse it. She would requite it, disclosing vnto her, that shee was great with childe, which something grieved speciallie with her Dacians absence: That day in the afternoon, to sport themselves and expell that heauinesse, the Emperour with all his Court went a hunting, for euery one desired it. On the beginning of the game the gallant Rosabell, and his friend Oriftoldo, straided so farre that they came to the Sea coast, by the way rowling a Hart whiche they in y^e plaine kild: they alighted to gaze on the calmenes of the quiet waues of the still sea. They had not long staid there when they saue come towardes them a little boate more swifter then the racking cloudes, euen to the place where they sate talking of Lirianas losse. Out of it there came forth a womā of strange behauiour, all clad in mourning weedes accompanied with an old man: so soone as she saue them of such gallant disposition, she went to the, and doing her dutie, in the woefullest manner shee could with many teares, said. Vayne knights, so the diuine powers comfort you, tell me if lately you haue seene the knight that last of all entred the Iusts in Grecia, or else where I might finde him, for it concernes me to meete with him no lesse then my life, and others that iniustly are like to lose them: Well perceaued the Prince of great Britaine that she enquired for him, so he made himselfe known, saying, Gallant

Ladie

18871
of the Mirrour of Knight

Lady, I am he you seek. Shee suffered more, but falling at his feet proceeded.

Oh most excellent knight, now is the time for your valour, for thereon depends the life of the people living, who against all equitie is like if thou wilt not loose thy propagated fame, to save the worldes vast regions, then enter in, for time limited is short. I am content, replied the like sayd Oristoldo, but to him the Lady without company it behoued the knight to goe alone, for necessity of one alone consisted the good event of the warre. It grieved the two friends to part, yet being embraced one another. The Greeke intreated him with his Parents and kindred, that he might have their leave. And entring the barke, it was with incredible celeritie. Greatly desired Roderick to have his owne armour and horse, but seeing it could not be had, he contented himselfe with his good sword hee had. Oristoldo returned where he had left the Ladies, and hee to goe backe to the Pallace, being all the while attended by Isabella and the Trojan Oristides. They demaunded whereupon Oristoldo declared the adventure of his friend. It greatly grieved Oliuia, but shee comforted her, intreating her not to thinke on him, for shee would leade him where he should be the most esteemed of any in the whole world (at the cost of his constancie) of any in the whole world. Upon they went to the Cittie, whence euery one took their departure to their owne Kingdomes. So did the Emperesse of Trebizound taking with her sister Rosiliera with the beauteous English Arden, and every one aduertised of what the wise man had said to Eleno. Onely was left in Court the Gracious Prince Zoylo with his louing Tigliassa, to whome they brought the mighty Andronio his couzen did come to see, knowing he was dead returned, whome the People Crowned their King. A better thinge could not

ff f

cond Booke of the third Part

and amorous laments did the warlike Ma-
he springing hopes of her concluding songe,
well imployed. She that had lately band, and
now with Thousand Benedictions blisse
out constraynt did she humble her selfe, that
paying him his Tribute, to whome the whole
ledged a wfull dutye, who did ever Loue
e) that did not thinke it a most pleasant lyfe:
earth no greater content then to loue, to ac-
owner, to haue him impressed in the middle
o discommoditie in true loue was euer scne
tent, since in saying, I am not mine owne,
glozie of sincere affection. So, maye I per-
ue without it, for if the earth affordes any
serted on it as on the surest foundation, to
itie. Not farre from whence she was with
plishing her fayth, arryued a Knight to ouer-
e melancholy night intending to goe to the
to obtaine the victorie and prizes. So shee
d her loue reasons, but it was not so, for the
st him, had so amazed his senses, that he not
d his owne speeches.

would the Jealous louer of the Heauens,
e tresses ouer the world, when the Knight y
ye began to expresse his firmenes with no
then the Ladie had done: for to the mello-
the chirping byrdes that celebrated the co-
e Sheapherd, he tuned his voyce with this

Liana if in so long an absence,
y any glory drowne my discontent,
y the thought of that most sweete content:
makes my soule more richer by thy presence.

I

of the Mirrour of Kn

I doe not speake sweete Godd
Wanting deserts to moue
Though I deserue to suffer
Yet might'st thou mitigate
And since thou art assured to
The pure sinceritie of my true
What canst thou get to shew t
Gainst him that his content h
Loying to see his true harts io
Tis but in vaine to be thus ty

With a sigh seeming with it to se
the More, the famousst in all the W
now called Morea whereof he was p
ned high Fame through a Thousand
done in the seruice of Lisiana Princ
beautie was accompted the greatest
which in deed was so, for it did not
uing ended his Sonnet the Lady wo
shewed himselfe so true a Louer, and
went towards the place from whence
where she saue a Knight tall of bod
young, armed in Rose colour armour
the middest of his shield, something
that proceeded from a Ladies eyes
Motto this.

If the Sunn becommeth dar
She being in beautie one.
Then may she ecclipse the M

So soone as the valiant Epirabio s
gan called) he sayd, What i't you seek
(replied the Lady) but to knowe the
himselſe so amorous: for if his outwa

of Knighthood.

the Goddesse by experience,
summe thee to lament,
to suffer any torment:
mitigate thy cruel sentence.
red to my cost,
my true loue,
shew thy selfe too rigorous,
tent hath lest:
parts ioye remoue,
thus tyrannous.

to send forth his soule ended
the Province of Peloponesus
was Prince: hee had obtay-
usand valiant deedes he had
Princesse of Lituania, whose
atest in y whole Paganisme:
d not a little cost Greece. Ha-
y would see who hee was y
, and closing her Beuer shee
hence shee hearde the voyce
bodie, well proportioned &
mour, with a halfe Moone in
ing Ecclipsed by the rayes
eyes, that gazed on it, the

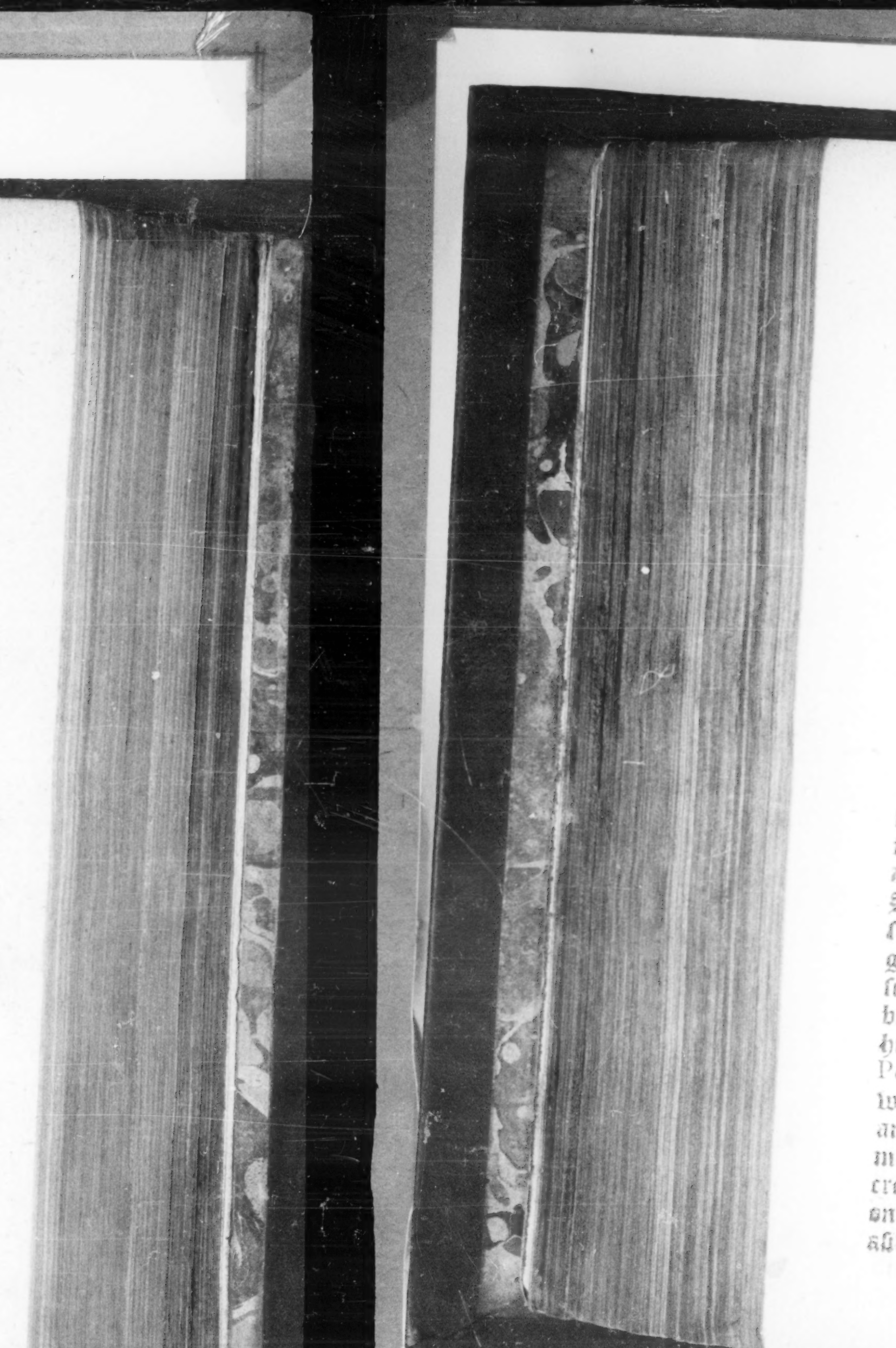
darke,

the Moone.

bio saw her (so was the Pa-
a secke sir Knight? nothing
the Knight that publisheth
toward signs may be credy-
ted

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

you, and if this knight be pleased, I am content to leaue.
He will he will said Bembo: doe not so rashly iudge (reply-
ed the enraged Pagan) and for all the Greeke Empire will I
not leaue this battaile: therefore get you from vs, for it
would be my lasting dishonour to giue ouer the first battaile
I undertake for my Ladie: you will not so discontent vs
(said Bembo) chiefly I intreating you, it will be to assault
you both (said he) yf you leaue me not, and so made as if he
would strike him: more furious was not Hercules among
the Centaures, then the Achayan being angred, so spark-
ling fier from his eyes, he said. I would I had found thee at
more ease discourteous knight, to teach thee how to accom-
plish the intreatie of thy betters: let not that greue thee,
(said he) for in me there is sufficient mettle for an hardier
enterprize: and not regarding any thing gaue him a mighty
blow vppon his helme. Ioues sword drewe hee forth that
descended from him, and with the strength the heauens had
giuen him, he discharged his furie on his helme, he cut a-
way a peece, and with a dangerous wound he stricke him
sencelesse at his feet. He left him and turning to the Ladie,
said, forgiue mee valiant knight, for his discourtesie to-
wards vs farre worse deserued: better handes then yours
could not be haue met (answered shee) to be assured of his
owne follie, & let vs from hence, for his being alone may be
occasion to driue him fro his deceit. They went where the
Ladie had her horse, going fro thence by reason of the swift
current of water that ranne that way, till they came to a
fresh meade where the brooke did spring, there they alighted,
letting their horses feede on the greene grasse. The Ladie
was something wearie, and with her face somewhat bloody,
which made her put of her helme to wash it of in the spring.
The valiant Bembo had not noted her to be a woman, so
did the sight suddenly surprize him, that had he not been so
poked to the beauteous Liriana, surely some other had cured
him: for this Ladie was of the fairest in the world, and ha-
uing scene her valour, might haue moued any ones affectio,



of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

that she stricke him in amaze, shee seconded another on his shield, it cut a pæce, with another of his helme. It was but more to anger the Pagan who fiercer then a leopard in y^e desert sandy Libia, discharged the strength of his armes on her rich helme. It sounded like a bell, flyding to the shoulder, carryed away the bymme with a pæce of the elbow armoz. It was so heauie that she was faine to set her knees vppon the grounde, with a point entred the More, thinking to ouerturne her, but the Lady seing it come voided it with a turne, making him following his owne strength tumble headlong at her feet. The Lady seing him so, thought she held the victorie by the hand: so she assaulted him, and to be another but he, it had not byn much had she slaine him, but y^e louer (few of whose like the world contayned) setting al his strength to rise at last (though it cost him a wound on the backe,) he cast his strong armes about her, & being lustier and bigger then she he extremely tired her, yet she wed she no sign of disadvantage in y^e wraastle. Little got either that way (so the Lady wth a swing did cast him from her, setting her owne hands thorough the force thereof vpon the ground. She rose swifter then an Eagle, soz that occasion was not to be omitted, by any weaknes. Alreadye came the Pagan against her. Shee stayed for him, perceauing her aduantage thereby, and as hee would execute his blowe, she entred with a thrust vnder his armes, making him not onely lose his blowe, but returne backe quicker then hee came, with desire of such another did the beauteous Sarmacia followe him, and warding a myghtie blowe that shee greatly felt, stricke at his leggs, quicke was the louer, so drawing backe his left legg, he made her lose the blowe, and almost the battaile, for carryed with the furie of her armes, shee turned twice about, that shee had been lyke to fall, hee helped her with a strong stroake on the shoulder which wounded her and bounding vppwards it fel on her throat. The valiant Patrone thought it had been mortall. She became of y^e colour of a red burning cole, and casting her shield to her backe, with both hãds she

strucke

The second Booke

yet was he a little amazed, & t
not altogether heale, yet at lest
quames. Remembzing himsel
sayd. In faith valiant Ladie, I
ed your beauty, in taking the b
since by the one, and by the oth
Shee answered. I would not
shew your selfe against me, ied
haue on you imparted, the whic
cōtent deserueth not, specially
in Constantinople: where I ha
see the end of them, that you mi
little beauty, in that against
came, two Ladies wonne the
made Cinthia pale, and Venus l
serued not for himselfe more t
ther was accompanied with a
dozned with grace, and ffortit
to be, the one for Nephewe, an
Prince of Dacia, couzen to the
dies were Archusilora Quene
mond Princeesse of Callidonia
whom the world should iustly
Soueraignes therof, for their
haue highly fauored me faire l
famous Tryumphes as the C
make it compleate binding me
partaker of your name and Co
swered the Dame) for in all th
my name is Sarmacia Prince
a certaine aduerture in quest
which hath not a little centen
sight of your valour. With the
Bembo rise, and sayd.

Oh Soueraigne Princeesse,
Royall handes, for onely to mi

Mirroure of Knighthood.

ing the Knight that stands befoze you. And
the Ladye heard admirable report of that
and howe neere of kinne they were, his
Fathers Sister. In her soule did she re-
iuncted with him, so she embraced him vsing
betwene them confirming the Consanguini-
ty, with their pleasaunt couersation: which
had all effect, but after it greatlye auayled to
the ending of the geneall peace. In their dis-
coursing not but discover to her his Loues, and losse
so tormented him with repetition thereof,
that he wattered them with many teares, more
then a warlike knight, whose enemies
cousen did comfort him with these words.
Knight for onely it must set your Ladye in
that he be not amazed nor wonder at Loues pro-
cesses unconsuming fier pardons none, but ra-
ise most furious against them that are with-
out that it may bee knowen, yf there bee anye
man other in the world tis subiect to his more
and that he is whom ought to be acknow-
ledged as the same Lord of the vniuerse. A mallady
on, that hauing many to bee companions
my cause to lessen y paine that particularly
it is not possible the place where your La-
dy should be so secret as not to bee knowne,
that shall your valerous arme serue but to
though in the enterprize wee lose our liues,
this time offer myne to bee employed in a
neede.

(wrote couze) that grieues me (replied the
but to haue heard y in her house & company,
ought vp, whom tis was told me she loued as
pected this was he y stole her from Nyquea
ere assured that hee had also lost her, why

The second Book

Strucke him, his shield is no d
beginning at one end, it ceast
a little wounding him on the l
mit no dexteritie, nor the life n
red so much as the death of one
howers hath the battle lasted, a
no shewe of aduantage. At
halowghty Bembo arryue to th
known by the Lady through t
Constantinople, which made h
and gentle was the mightie Ac
tesse did flourish: he neuer suffer
lesse hee knewe the cause: so le
himselfe betwene them, sayin

With-hould awhile braue k
me the cause of so fierce a fight
Those that are proude and ha
Lady) iudge euery occasion suf
ronious and false opinion: &
himselfe the prizes of the Greci
sorrowing he had not come in
had been no small honour to ha
had to their costes procured it,
them, he grieued at this truth.
Therefore with-draue you fir
to let him returne to his countr
It had well pleased the gallant
take the battle on himselfe, as
ged therein, yet would he not
wounded, and that thereby not
death of one or both. So hee re
courteous relation.

Sufficient was the occasion
battailes then this: Neuerthe
fauour, that for my sake you w
then this (replied she) doe I de

l.

desirous
discozds
part both
They re-
reccaued
his chil-
them the
Ate that
ses. All
& Festi-
the time
re deliue-
the beaus
archiflora
irest that
according
starre in

there en-
life of the
Mother
uld, and
an to ine-
ian.

complish
Prusia farr
with the
m as her
nothing
ce equall
he exceld
ontaine,
Bembo

What

The second Booke of the third Part

thats an easie remedy (sayd she) by taking away y^e Knights lyfe from betwene you. And if altogether fortune will persecute vs with barbarous crueltie, there are other Ladies on whome you may imploy your thoughts, that may be no lesse beautifull then the Princesse of Nyquea, though hers be so matchlesse as you say, whereto he replyed Onely that doe I feare (excellent Lady,) that loue will bring me to that passe, that I shall not loue what I doe now. And in faith beleue me to a true lover nothing but this is odious: For he that loueth onely in this procures to propagate his flame, leauing in hand of inconstant fortune the remedie from: y^e partie loued: who seing how shee is loued, and for her sake what is suffered, she may bestow her guerdon not as this deserves, but according to the liberall fauours that lovers vse. In this chat were these amorous Princes, when along the same meadowe they spied a knight comming in rich white armour with many knots of gold and greene about them, on his shield in the middle of many flames was set a faire Cylic. Straight did she knowe him, and it was not a little she did in not manifesting her loue, with the ioye she conceaued to see her deare Orisides, who was he that came. At that instant she laced on her helme saying to Bembo. Behold yonder deare couzen the whole remaynder of destroyed Troy, & beleue me the world hath not a better knight: I am glad you are in such an occasion present, for I haue a combate to performe against him agreede vpon in Lacedemon, where we had a certaine controuersie. But that arryued the gallant Troyan, verie glad to see them so well armed, hee saluted them and sayd.

Can you tell me (sir Knights) any newes of a knight in Indian colour armour, with seauen starrs vpon his shield who makes me seek him with moze care about these woods, then I haue reason for? The Ladie made answere, we haue not seene him sir knight: but according to the care you saye you haue to seke him, no maruel if you bee carelesse of a battle you appointed at Lacedemon: for tis an ignominious
wrong

The second

C

What befell to Warl
a Knight vpon t
Lyrian



With some
bo W
cozen S
thinkin
not to l
against

tune: With this desire h
the Sea shore, desirous
how he languished on la
riners, receaued him s
high accompt, and dese
of his helme, discoverin
more astonisht them bi
His haire were of a da
a manifest token of his
white: and his face sul
seemed cherefull, but b
on with trembling fear
that no armour except
was an enemy to effen
ry him, nor neuer bega
Justice on his side. W
plainely shewe the gen
wills of the conquered
so rare a vertue ought
of a bloody victory, an
selfe, as the conquered
ceping his Competitor
his loues distracted hi

ond Booke of the third Part

CHAP. XX.

Warlike Bembo Prince of Achaya with
upon the Sea, at the Tower where
Lyriana was inchaunted,

th some consolation did the Heroyck Bembo Prince of Achaya depart from his deare
rozen Sarmacia Princeesse of Lacedemon
hinking he wronged his haughtie corage,
not to shew the magnanimitie of his mind
against the rigorous causes of blinde fo-
resire he entred the first barke he found on
sious a while to Nauigate by sea, seeyng
d on land. The Maister and all the Mar-
him with great content iudging him of
d deseruer of farre more courtesie. He put
ouering his faire and sturdy visage, which
em binding the more vnto more kindnesse.
of a darke yellow coloz verie thick curled;
of his approued strength. His colour was
ace full of light & well proportioned: his eyes
but being enraged, they amazed the looker
g feare, he was double breasted, insomuch
cept purposely made woulde fit him, hee
effeminate men neuer did fighting weas-
t began battle, but assuredly thought the
e. Being Conquerour, hee would more
e generositie of his minde, attracting the
uered with singuler clemencie, saying, that
ught not to be extinguished by the honour
e, and so would take the conquest on hym
uered. Finally Lirgandeo sayth that ex-
etitors, the world had not a better Prince:
d him of his best sences, for imagining
that

of the Mirrour of Kn

that another loved his Lady and wa-
the raignes of patience, with sighes
soule indured, urged thereto by the al-
ling hart, as now hee did with in the
the fourth day of his Nauigation, se-
uerwhelmed in his imaginarie thoug-
whose furious billowes his barke pl-
midnight, sitting on the hatches, to
sighed forth, these loose rymes.

Hart without ioy, and woes with wo-
The power of loue is with more f-
To make me slave to vylde capti-
Loosing all hope, of hope & libertie
There is no sweete vnesse from h-
That Lillies white, and Roses re-
What ioy without Liriana can be-
In absence of her beauty nothing
But if she send the ioy, it is past i-
A buckler gainst all paines, and
It yeeldes in torment pleasure and
And when tis worst, tis woide o-
I must nor, not I dare nor hope fo-
Since loue my woes procures by wa-
Bereauing me (by stealing her)
Changing my ioy to paine, my peac-
Oh thou vast sea, through which
Oh watrie waues, clere skie, and b-
If any pretie you on earth bestowe:
Shew it on me, that am by loue tro-
Mistred with moes, inchain'd
Made poore in hope, but rich in
Acknowledging content in disco-
Calling that ioye where no ioy ere
She's faire, but coy, exclude me in-
For all my ioy is in desire made ba-

The second

combate with me. I th
cia, not with warre,
vanquishd me. I am
(said the Troian) most
winnes therein. Hea
speake to the Prince
comes with me, who i
to the Troian spake. &
how dearly I loue you
upon they receaued on
In their chat he vnder
with no smalle alterat
ued her: well did the h
that his Cousin bare to
be inclosed where tis
fest, that Bembo wou
rits assuring his glorie
sence to all their high
tracted perpetuall ame
ly obserued, for in gen
could not forsake the g
many fauours at his h
intreated the Prince
with the Greeke Emp
woes he could not con
there would not want
tooke his leaue of them
on his fierie Courser h
Forrest till he came to
selfe not directing his i
where fortune and the
louers desirous to see
Forrest, which they th
yan were couragious
morous desires. It w
lence: but her time b

ond Booke of the third Part

I thought to requite it by coming to Greece, but to craue peace of the Knight that I am, and euer will be yours vanquished moſte beauteous Ladie as one that onely Leaueth this (replied the amorous Ladie) & Prince of Achaya that is this Knight which who is not a little affected to you: wherefore ke. All the worlde deare Ladie knowinge you, is bound to doe me fauour. There- fore one another as beſitted their Royalties. Underſtood he was Couſin to his Ladie, for alteration was he till then ſuppoſing he loſt the haughtie Moore perceauing the affection he bare to that Knight (this paſſion can neuer be tis well rooted.) It came to be ſo manie would winne the gallant Oriſtides by mer- glorie, betrothing them there in his pre- high contents. The two warriors con- ſulted ametic, which in particuler they ſolemn- n generall in the Greeke warres, Oriſtides the great Trebatio hauing receaued ſo ma- ny at his handes. The newe betrothed louers Prince of Achaya to goe and bee acquainted Emperour, but as hee liued in continuall not condeſcend to their intreaties, anſwering want occaſion to doe it another time, hee left them to all their griefes. And mounting herſelf hee ſpurd through the thickeſt of the ſea to the Sea coaſt, where hee ſhipt him- ſelf his iourney to any certaine place more the and the waues would conduct him. The two ſaw ſee themſelues alone, paſt all the day in ſuch they thought but a minute, where if the Tro- ious hee would not defer the end of their a- It was not knowne for the trees kept ſil- ne being crypyed, the Lady was deliuered of

of th

of a Daughter who
They named her
to leaue ſome men
then the firſt did not
recoorde, for a Gre
turned to Conſta
them with great i
dren: and knowi
Tytle, and Crow
through the worl
the Lordes and La
ualles, with ſtate
of her deliuerie be
red both in one day
teous Roſamond w
(to whome ſhe diſc
his age did knowe
to his beautie: he
the middle of his b

A little they eni
tred a graue wiſe m
Child conſiſted to b
would by no means
ſo perſwaded her to
ſtrict him in all thi

This traytoꝝ Lu
it, and rather conu
remoted from Gre
Kinges Daughter,
life. It ſhall be here
brieſe in deſcribing
in valour to all his
them, for a better
where we muſt lea
on the Seas.

The second Booke of the third Part

There wanted no louing sighes wherewith the valyant youth bemoaned his paines, and the glorie that from them he conceaued, calling the Sea Gods and Goddeses to witness his passions, who hearing what the gentle Louer published, could not but pittie him. So past he the night till about the bright lating of the high heauens, he sawe a barke moze swifter then the winde passe by his, along thereon lay a knight all armed, no lesse lamenting his griefes then he, and yet with moze reason, he went saying.

O h loue, may it bee thou shouldst by all meanes seeke to ruinate my onely hopes being so long since assured, that if I liue tis but to loue, yeilding to thee the awesfull tribute of my tributarie selfe as liedge man to thy deitie, and that for all these spoyles, hauing my hart as hostage of my faith thou shouldst delight to permit the enemye of my death to vse mee thus, giuing me life to liue in such distresse? No moze could the amorous Pagan heare, by reason of the celeritie it carryed, though by it he vnderstoode the wrong he suffered, and seing howe generall it was, sayde. O woefull Prince, what little remedie is there left thee, seeing tis denyed to euery one, there is no hoping for it by liuing? O pestiferous plague, how much art thou wapt within the poyson of thy tozments, and yet how wished is it to the dire cost of louers poore soules, that with such bitter lamets doe celebrate their swete woes. By this did he see that the bark was stayed not farre from the foot of a stately edefice, builded vpon the sea. The Achayan Lord rested amazed w the sight: and to knowe what it was commanded his to bee directed thither: he entred by the side of the inscriptions, in sight of a knight, that was already ryzen, resembling Mars himselfe, by his magnificence: with the first scrowle that Bembo mett with, was this.

The entrance of the marueilous Tower is granted to none, not bringing the armor of the ingratest Louer of the earth.

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Naturally bold was the furious youth, and not respecting the contents of the scrowle, hee flunge at one of the pillars, thinking that way was the ascending to the Tower. But he had scarce taken it with his handes, when sodainely there arose so much fier that the knight seemed all of a kindled coale, and certainly he had incurred mightie daunger of his life, had he not had on the armes of Saturne whose nature resisted that element. Notwithstanding he parted from it, almost stifled with the heate that entred through his visor. Well did the other knight see it that not farre from thence, gazed on those that looked towarde the occident, & seeing the fier that had risen, (though more ready he seemed for his graue, then to smile) yet he laughed so high that the fierce Pagan heard it, that not a little was abashed thereat, and not able to dissemble it, sayd. I would gladly knowe (sir knight) the cause of your content, since with such exterior signes you haue shewen it. None other (replied hee in the yelowie of this colour was his armour,) but to haue scene (sir knight) with what vehemencie that flame would haue imbrast you within your armour. It cannot bee expressed what rage entred within the Pagan, by the aunswere, he turned to the displayer, saying. It had been farre better, since you haue scene armour to haue tryed the saue of the fier of the pillars, in that the scorching flames of Loue, you haue already published along the sea in your Nauigation: and now I dare affirme you are with reason thus suffered to liue, considering how much you flie from labour.

Wise and aduised is the Ladye, that from so cowardie a knight detaines her fauours: But since you haue scene with what audacitie I embrace yonder fier, prepare your selfe, for to your cost will I make you know, how I can defend y inclosed in my hart. There was no need to aduise him thereof, for Mars would he haue fought touching what Bembo there had vrged. Neuer vpon the doubtfull seas, nor on the certaine Lande was there euer scene of a single fight a more fiercer combat: For y warriors are the flower of Christen-

dome,

of the third Part

od within the Pagan frozen
 le, his Shield he cast at his
 Claridianos hee let flye, it
 m the one to the other end it
 cle he did not the like by his
 descended, cutting a great
 in his Cuskes which being
 the thigh. They that were
 ot each other, but setting
 words in both hands, began
 sed among the Cyclopes in
 the seas resounded with the
 he heauens racking clouds
 m their standings, posting
 t thereof. So did they that
 ing their heades vnder the
 e the remoycelesse blowes
 howres haue they fought,
 ed: they were so tired, that
 et to breath. It was worse
 e being narrow he had no
 in his side being great, be-
 In a thousand imaginati-
 oward, that in presence of
 put him in that state. In
 in) may the world blame
 ew, where, from whence
 es: what iustice canne I
 ie for my paine, putting
 esence on such a danger?
 endring so ill an accompt
 blasphemies breathed the
 furie with such deuotion
 come to this (continued
 r carelesnesse deserues.
 e, vttered many things
 against

of the Mirrour of K

against himselfe being by one Iak
 (said the furious Greeke) may I
 a father: for he had by this ended
 q that am his Sonne, haue Iza
 is presented to me. I cannot be h
 tribulation, for he that tribulated hi
 of Greece, had before this obtaine
 furie so encreased, that he tooke h
 handes, and made towarde the
 ous than a Lyon stayed for him.
 with such blowes regroeted, each
 sayeame throane did tremble. W
 the Greeke set, but the Pagan his
 swift as a towzing Faulcon: and
 the Greekes, entring on a sudden
 more celeritie then the quicke swin
 It was a wonder he did not vnlace
 ted with payne the one of them,
 it, and Lirgandeo sayth the smart
 the sight indured.
 Well did the More see the good b
 therefore would he close with him,
 refuse it, being taken with some ad
 ouerthrowne, so fiercely hee entre
 king of one foote timo, he stode so
 thought he hadde incompassed a
 stryued that they fell on the hatch
 fearing to loose thereby. By this
 an loose so much blood that it was m
 out, for all the barke was stayned
 vpper and downe the boate, the C
 boorde thereof, that taking hou
 strength then maye bee imagine
 Moore with a swinge hee flung
 with admirable lightnes he set hi
 not y Pagan in doing the like, thou

of Knighthood.

one knight so bayted. Aniuſtly
may I be called the ſonne of ſuch
ended two ſuch Combates, but
e hazarded the loſſe of one that
ot be he that is the Lover of Ar-
ried his hart to her in the woods
btained a glorious victorie. His
ooke his ſwoord twiſt both his
s the Pagan, that more couragi-
him. Together they met, and
each other, that vials in his
le. One knee to the ground did
an his right hand, he aroſe as
: and croſſing his ſwoord with
dden with his left foote, with
e ſwinde he let lie at his legs.
onlace them, but it ſo tormen-
hem, that hee could not ſurre-
art thereof laſted all the while

ood blowe hee hadd made and
him, and the Greeke could not
me aduantage, he was almoſt
entred to the waſtle: but ma-
de ſo ſtrongly, that the Pagan
ed a Rocke. So longe they
atches, not daring to loſen,
e this meanes did the Achav-
as maruell how he could hold
yned with the helme, fumbling
he Greeke went ſo nighe the
g houlde thereat with more
agined, in deſpight of the
ung him to the farther ſyde,
et himſelfe on foot. Slow was
though in this ſeconde battle
twas

Second Booke of the third Part

ganisme, and the disparity was no lesse then
since Claridiano, who out of hope in loue, as
related departed from Grecia. None of the
would lose such a battle; for neyther Faune
came to behold it: And not so much but the
ones lifted up their heads to looke on the two
world. In sight did y^e angry swelling waues
more milde then now. Peace did Eolus and
together with all their senerall attending
ging along the greene azured waters till they
lace where the battle was to be fought. The
ios friends to Humane kinde with sportine
to solemnize the fight. In the aire appeared
of battailes, in the same forme that he became
pion to approue her sayest. The windowes
ous Tower were opened at the which appea
closed Ladies, whose presence beautified the
ade the loftie heauens farre more faire. All the
Goddesses with Marses consent ordained Judge
he most beauteous Lyriana, that fayrer then the
Grecian discordes, appeared all in white. A
ue & beneath made her a solemne courser. Mars
we with his Celestiall throne invited her into
he gallant dame would not admit it, but rather
(chiefepurities of chiefest purenes) to leane o
owes, at what time, the enraged Pagan turned
saw her whose Image in his soule was stamp
ized with the new sight. Euery thinge slept
more, and with the greatest forgetfulnesse of
cast himselfe vpon the pummell of his sword,
he raygues of all his imaginations, he so occu
e in the good he viewed, that he thought there
e to be hoped, ioying to haue founde where she
nted, that so had inchaunted his desires.
as neuer scene a more quicker distraction then
ein Bembo was onely gazing on the excellencie

of the Mirrour of K

of his Lady. Well did Claridia
thinking he did it, in little esteem
shippe, and therefore was the bat
ping to him, shaking him by the a
It should seeme (Knight) you ha
you gaue me, seing how carelesly
dies. As one wakened out of a sin
gan vnto himselfe, replying. I wa
discourtesie, but I haue it well in
none is here to disturbe me from r
no time of ceremonious courtesies
plie, our new baptized Knight had
more puissance then he that behel
helme hee gaue him such a blowe,
hande vpon the grounde. This
the Pagan did receaue since he put
rose he had giuen him another on h
of sparkles flew about his head.
at such mighty stroakes, vnable to
a Knight might bee, but altogethe
toppe of the Greeces shelde he
which made him giue backe with
stepps. To helpe him downewardes di
another thrust with the vtmost stre
of them had stuck him, but his su
backe, notwithstanding they put
Pagan followed with vehemence
him: but Archifloras Louer that p
owne sword hard, turning away
as he past, on the toppe of his plun
discharge the furie of his strength,
a conduit of his luke-warme blood
selfe, he gaue him on that side a fu
for the Pagan to giue backe at th
happened betwixt a ioynt, cutting

of Knighthood.

Claridiano note the Moors amaze, he
steeming him, he leapt into his
the battle more fiercer, and steep
the arme, sayd, on this day
you haue forgot the proud word
easily you stande looking on La
of a sweet dyame returned & Pa
I was not so forgetfull of th
ell in remembrance, & glad tha
rom reuenging it. That wa
rtelies, for ere hee ended his re
ht had assaulted the Pagan with
heheld him. Upon his rich
lowe, that it made him set on
This was the greatest blou
e put on armour. Before he
er on his Weuer, that squadrons
ad. Abashed, was the Moor
ble to imagine whom so strong
gether beeing recovered to the
e he let flie a pittyleffe blow
with twoo so that vnseemely
ers did he enter with one, and
ost strength of his arme: either
his sure armour rebounded the
put him to great paine. The
ence thinking to ouerthrowe
that perceaued it, houlding his
away let him goe by him, and
s plumed helme did Claridiano
ngth, that he made his mouth
blood. Ere he recovered him
e a furious thrust, it was well
at the strength thereof, yet it
tting his flesh, & leauing him

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

red neuer a word, for she neyther knewe her selfe nor any o-
ther, only might she disturbe any battaile when any of Lu-
percios faction sustained the worst. She returned away w-
her Ladies leauing the Prince in obscure darknesse. Hee
lost all the mouing powers of his body, and stood gazing at
the place where he had scene his glozie. In that vision wold
he haue dyed, thinking he departed in quiet: but hauing o-
uer-past that amorous care, with a sigh, he burst into these
speeches.

O cruell Lady, scourge of the Achayan house, may it be
such inhumane crueltie should bee inclosed within so faire a
Lady? what law permits thou shouldst knowe I dye, I
ioye therein, that tis my life to suffer many deaths for thy
sake, and that thou hast neuer been pleased to say I am pleas-
sed to admit it? This is a tirannie that admits no compa-
ratine, for if my death wil auaille thee, or that thou wilt not
loue let me knowe it, and my selfe will bee the cruell execu-
tioner, of a most cruell death if therein consistes thy contēt?
But vnfortunate mishap, tis enough it comes from me, &
that Bembo doth desire it, to be denyed by Lyriana? If any
should be cherished in life for well louing, is there any on y-
earth that better then my selfe hath done it? Is there anye
that with more puritie doth Idolatrize thy affaires then I?
Is there any that omitting his owne pleasure will procure
thine, but I? If then (fairest of all Fayres, beauteous Li-
riana) thou art of this assured, why doest thou thus prolong
my remedie? why becomest thou deasse to my exclaimes?
Thine I am, and thine will I die? let fortune still be oppo-
site euen to my hopes, and may the heauens euermore con-
spire against Bembo, my heart hath patience to endure
all. First began I to pyne, ere I knewe whome I loued, &
since from all aspects I am dissuaded, (and shoulde believe
it) will I onely in thoughts end my dayes. So much blood
lost he, that the Daister pittying him sayd. Sir Knight bee
not such an enemy to your selfe, for it may cost you your life,
the differring of your cure. My happe will not bee so good
I i (replied



The Mirrour of Knighthood.

be a seruitor to Cupid: but the hast that cald
ines me to depart, for my Lady the Prin-
swere of some busines by my returne who
mayned not farre hence in a house of plea-
is the Princesse Artemisa of England, and
t so free as were conueniēt: So (sir knight)
n me, for fortune maye appoint better oc-
enjoy your amorous conuersation, which
ttracted me. At all times (faire Ladye re-
hat you will so fauour me, will I accompt
puting it according to your many merits,
so faire a dame. And if my power may any
content, commaund me, for with all dili-
ill I accomplish it. With this she depar-
morous Pagan affected to her witty wan-
nting on his horse he cōtinued on his way
n, what the next recounteth.

CHAP. XXI.

correst happened to the couragious Bem-
he Princesse of *Trebizound* and her
ard; with other aduentures,

unted on a brauer horse then anye they
which drawing the goulden eye of heauen
ompasse about the Terrene Dybe, some-
what after his meridionall decline trauel-
ed the mighty Bembo, with his pilgrime
oughts onely on his Lady, that to driue
is the wanton damozels prettie chat no
re he left that Empyze to see that Court
hout the world, by reason of the excellent
ned there. On this ranged his pensue
h some ease, which the pleasant sounde of
moued, seing that to, among them loue

The second Booke

(replied the Prince) as to me
paine expect and desire anchor
Nevertheless (sayd the Baili)
suffer a death by the heauens
to any ones honour. Such per
of his vrmor, and layde him on
cabbins. They dyest him with
his of his Lady. They would
daies which he continued the
seing twas but in vaine, he co
intending to demaund of his f
weapons the entrance to that
riners to please him would ha
daine tempest, that twas vnpo
they carryed backwards vp
till the eyght day they arriued
of many trees and woods. It gl
had tyed him. So he comman
landed, and armed in all his a
maunding the rest to staye fo
learned what countrey that w
path he could see till the after
day heate was somewhat cool
Fountaine, eating such prou
from the ship. So eating was
grim thoughts wandred on L
taine where he was, arryued
then well attired, who not (fo
lighted with rare gallantnes,
pearled spring, where she rea
tifull, hauing dyed her face w
stept to the Prince with these
and the commodiousnes of the
you company, although respo
doth expresse, I believe it wil

Mirroure of Knighthood.

that loue hath inuented to louers colles
and incozage their pensiueneſſe . A
agan , and vſed to ſaye hee merited
ed a knight that woulde not in a La
ure his life, hazing his owne affaires
and ſo answered.

Damozell) though all humane con
tableſome vnto mee , yet yours ſhall
e I thinke you are a little ſcholed in
de , a manyfeſt token that hee that
y pleaſed to make you his tributarie:
eing thoſe the ſoule conuerſeth al al
e one to aunſwere mee, will make my
ble, perſwading my ſelfe of good lucke
lande, where my fortune hath caſt me,
ſuch a good beginning, where ſhee re

ſir knight) you bee in loue, ſeeing with
woulde ſo ſoone launche into the deepe
non thinge amonge knightes that on
nt, & there is no cauſe you ſhould aſſure
foz with it the fountaine reſtes moze
wherein Narciffus gazed: So that ſir
ke other meanes then theſe to Court the
und (which is the Lande you nowe
re is too common , and they knowe it
reſume ſo on their beautyes, foz tel
s to increaſe their rygoz againſt them
vwe.

nde vnto your ſeruyce pleaſaunt La
o gladde to heare the chatte of the rig
is aduiſe , foz as a Pouice in thys
he manners thereof, I talked according
r Nations at this time, ſince there is no

The second Booke of the third Part

hath his commaund: For if they will strive either to excell o-
ther in their notes, it is because he raignes among the, that
makes the rusticke countrey swayne more excellenter then
Demostenes in eloquence of speech, so he be toucht with loue.
What tongue or pen hath he subjugated, that hath been poore
in skill, and not rich in wit? who could euer utter the abun-
dance of a copious and artificiall tongue, unlesse moued by
the sonne of his mother Venus? The Sarracine Prince did
not call himselfe deceaued for yeilding of his faith, but con-
sidering he had past any time without Loue, he feared it
lost: and that life worse the death that is not troubled with
Cupids amorous passions. In this and in a thousand com-
plots which Loue propounded him was he occupied, when
from out a fragant thicket he saw comming a companie of
Knights richly armed: not farre after them there came three
attending on a sumptuous Carre, wherein he thought hee
saw some Ladies, till approaching more nigh, he was assu-
red it was so ouer-viewing the riches of the knights: Two
of them were of one deuise, all green with the spanish armes
vpon their shields, wherby he knew them to be Spaniards,
as indeed they were, being those two valiant brothers that
went to the Grecian warres, for the Emperoure Alphebo
would not suffer them to retourne accounting greatly of
them, so they were entertayned with name and Charge of
Captaines of the Emprye. The other (that seemed of a big-
ger constitution although so well proportioned, that the
Prince highly reputed him) was that warlike and gallant
Teferreio, great friend to the Emperour and Don Eleno:
his armour was russet set with many riche stones, which
with curious knots wonderfully adozned his strong brest-
plate. Neuer did the Prince see so bigge & comely a knight,
and though he himselfe was not much lesse than ix. fete in
height, yet with his hand could he not reach the others head.
So soone as they sawe the Prince, with so lamentable a de-
uise, they did with admiration view him, seeing his Ma-
iestie on horse-backe, only by this in many places when he
would

1.
erie yonge
ich made
fe when I
ouer any
y belwaile
nes worse
nered Ro-
the sight
s bre not
e, for he
a) there
ered the
radie be-
e won-
so truly
had gi-
g of the

message.
esse of
e thre
at they
deuise
te you,
th eue,
shalbe
hem as
s that
e La-
glad-

lustes
etual
bar-
ights
more
then

The second Booke of the third Part

content to Ladies equall to the calling of them beautifull, receauing griefe by the contrary, and not y least in compting them not fayze although the heauens haue towarde them byn niggards in their influences, making them not of y absolute. She answered. They doe so that will not beleue what they are, contrary to vs in Trebizound, and therefore be they pleased to be tearmed by what they are not, giuing their louers fauours though faygned for it: who more by insinuating then a firme faith procure the content of being beloued. Not for all the Ladies so saying to their gallantes, (sweete damozell answered the Pagan.) Cease they to be liberall, carefull, and for their Mistres good most ready. The damozell replied, with that, tis so: for it doth more euidently shew how the hart loues: and on the last, grouding what abroade is vsed, I saye, that Ladye is ingratefull that will not shew her pittie being assured shee may, by a Thousande new fauours that her gallant may be animated, knowing if he liues by louing that his fayth is also repayd by loue. This is that which best assures the hoped good betwene louers, & on y Ladies behalfe their glozy of being beloued. Other manner of courting vse you here (faire damozell sayd Bembo) the in those places I haue trauailed: for the gallants in my countrey, onely procure by louing to assure their Ladies thereof, that they may be pleased to condescend therto, making their wills known vnto them.

In respect of the intollerable paines suffered, do they neuer require any guerdō, but only procure to propagate that magnanimitie wherwith they sacrifice theselues vnto their Ladies, setting in their hands their hearts & soules, expecting nothing hereby but the glorious surname of their amorous knights. Strange things haue you tould me sir knight said she, & gladly would I know whome you loue, to be certified whether it be so or no: but perswaded it is so, I know not what the Trebizound Ladies meane, so much to debase their beauties. And far more the to receaue a iewel of great prize would I esteeme to haue longer time to discourse with

The sec

then the Iusts. And
the Ladies, which
teous: for the Iust
selfe, but here got
so strongly, that he
rop but he recouer
reuenge his brother
although this ende
from passing forth
dies Charriot, wh
ded it to be opened
cia greater nor rare
tion in his best di
they doe not altoget
ceipt of his blindness
dresse was more de
whome Rosiliera sa
fended you sir knig
priue vs of our keep
as I was requested
your pleasure: since
Honor, that I know
that fortune alred
gin to shew some fa
sed, I am readie to
vnto these knights,
pects me. So let he
not accept this ercul
follow the auspicious
(answered he) excep
ceth we are pleased t
fearelesse doe it sir k
maine against your
aduenture my life for
uer:) and therfore w
ged or no. He humb

second Booke of the third Part

s. With this answer returned the Page vnto which greatly pleased them to see him so cour- e Justs the chollerick Spanyard prepared him- e got he little, soz Lirianas louer encountred him hat he threwh him frō his saddle, he lost one stir- couered it so quicke that none perceaued it. To oother prickt forth y elder, finding like gaine, s encounter was stronger, yet not to lette him sozwards on his swift Courser, vntill the Las- t, who to enioy better of his sight had cōmaun- ned on all sides: he had not seene out of Gre- 2 rarer beautie then there was. Some altera- est did it cause, remedies are they, that though altogether salue, yet dispose of cure soz the de- indnesse, placing his loue, where hope of re- ere despaire. To gaze on them he stood still, to era said: we knowe not wherein we haue of- r knight, that with such crueltie you should de- ar keepers: he replied. Most excellent Ladies, uested be them to doe it, I presumed so to doe : since that, haue matters happened so to my I know not wherto I should attribute it, saue alredie wearie in persecuting me, would be- ome fauour. Neuerthelesse if I haue displea- die to make satisfaction, rendring the victorie ights, and leaue the Justs with him that ex- let he his lance fall to the ground, wee will s excuse (said the Princesse) but wil haue you spiousnesse of your fortune. Not I faire Ladie) except your beautie do commaund me: suffi- eased therby (replied Artemisa) that you may it sir knight, and as soz the other that doth re- t your winning of the thre knights place, to life soz it is nothing (answered the gallant lo- soze will I trie whether my Fortune be chan- humbled himselfe to them with such gallante- nesse,

of the Mirrour of

nesse, that both Ladies wisht him launce himselfe, moze quicker the Carrier. To the Juste spurd the moze horro: then a flashe of Light Clowdes vanishing in them. The ces mounted so high that they we- launces did they breake without k- Teferreo thereat, seing his hap bef- soze he sayd. Sir knight if you th- fle at all aduentures, seeing wee- Prince feared to displease the Lad- I would (sir knight) gladly conte- come with such hast, that I may- cept it, to be perfozmed this day f- It pleaseh me (replied the Cyar- you shall not now neede to tell you- eltie (replied he) doth fortune per- all my life to weare this empreze, seke me, demaunding in Achaya f- shall you heare newes of me. They- moze furie then Mars hadde done, spæde they met with such force tha- Out of the saddle did Teferreo find- since Don Elenos battaile, yet was- his raygues in his hande, though- soz eleuating himselfe made him th- his leate. The valerous Bembo th- remayned on horsebacke, but wit- brydle and stirropps, that to shun- layne to leape from his Courser. C- so he sayd.

Pours is the prize of the Justes f- such honour obtayned it, so may vo- of the Princesse, whose aduantage- change. None in kindnesse went b- soze made this reply. Most Heroyl-

The second Booke of the third Part

blemish it by other meanes, yet the eyes wher
d on him with such particuler care, were euide
f her affection had the Prince noted it. To
hand the two Ladies walked into the thicket
the freshnes of the aire, which was so pleasur
them go further then they would, and being t
ut pathes, they could not when they would re
not a little grieved the. Whereupon y^e Princeesse
hall become of vs Lady, if we shold remaine in
place? great hath been our carelesnes to p
out the companie of our Knights, for we might
miscarrie if any wilde beast should yssue out of
I maye goe secure (replyed Artemisa) for seeing
left, to repaire vnto the fayrest. May me (say
hee saye not so, for my flesh trembles to heare
minine feares were they busied, when fro the
ne a mighty bigge Knight in bignes, like a g
no2, with foure Knights with him, of no lesse
aister, who was Lord of y^e famous Ile of R
the Carpatian Sea, not far disioynd from the
gypt and Lycia, he was called Valdanio y^e fr
no2ed by heare-say of Rosiluera, came to Treb
knights, whome hee disperst foure seuerall
tent, which was by anye meanes to steale
once in safety set in his Ile gainst all the vn
defend her. In seing the Ladies, he knew
and with extreamie ioy hee cryed out. Oh
thou hast kept for me such good fortune? I w
e it with rich sacrifices vntil the death. He
it, supposing there might bee thereabouts
so went he to y^e Ladies that seemed moze lik
n living creatures. She whome he loued
ous Gyant take in his armes: a better pri
de, had fortune fauored him to the end.
dy had moze courage so she ran into the th
e Knights would not followe her, but seing

18871

Part

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

god occasion spurring with greatest spæde their hozses, toke their way to the Sea coast where their Galley expected the with her sayles ready spread. This while had Artemisa time to send her clamors, through the emptie aire keeping on her flight, whose eccho, broght her where their knights expected, the, to whom, in most pittifull maner she recounted y Princeesse misfortune. Which thing exceedingly greued euerye one, with sudden amazement, except it were the furious Bembo knowing which way she went, moze swifter then y passage of the racking Cloudes, vpon his fierie Courser (the which the world yelded not two better) he followed y villanous Gyant with the Princeesse: who in a trance was carryed till hauing run the space of some two miles, in y myddle of a spacious field, at the fote of a spreading Cedar tree sawe a knight lye, clad all in armor, that with y noyse was risen, to knowe the reason of it. So soone as the Lady sawe him, with great lamentation she sayd. So the heauens in all your actions blesse you (sir knight) suffer not this moste vniust outrage to bee done mee. Straight did the knight knowe her for many dayes since, had he made her the proper loue of his owne soule, tributarie to hers. For this was the haughtie Don Cellindo of the hidden groue, where he hadde seen the portrature of that Lady, who by chance was Sundered fro his Sister, nothing sorrowing for it, to goe to Trebizound & see that Princeesse that so had captiuated him. Nothing slow was Alicandros Nephew for swifter then an Eagle he ioyned with the Gyant thus. Set downe thy burden vntutred beast, for lesse then thy head it shall not cost thee, he durst not run against him, for hitting of the Lady, but being moze nigher sayd againe.

Stay villanous knight for so easilye is not the fairest flower of Trebizound to be carried away, in whose defence first will I lose my life then see her sustaine the least iniury. Otherwise then set her downe could not the Rhodian Lord doe, sure to remoue that blocke out of his way, and glad to, that his knights as he thought would not stay long, but

The second Booke of the third Part

send that through my meanes you lose the merits due by your person, and worthy to these Knights, for if I attend on the Ladies it shalbee as your friend in your panie, or otherwise I will returne the way I came. Will not haue you (sayd one of the Spanyards) to banke vs in all thinges, and since the condition was ours, there is no cause why we should not suffer it, and so lets speake to the Ladies for tis time they were going. Be it as you will. It sir Knight answered Bembo, seing I must not delay ready approached the Charriote with the Princesses, with respect of the Knights seemed sorrowfull, though the beauteous Rosilucra was the ioyfullest in the world, seing how the Knight in the blacke had defended himselfe, so she spake. I beleeue (Knights) we must impute to our small meanes and lesse good fortune, the cause of our changing now to which being so, henceforth (sir Knight) begin to execute your new charge which I feare you will thinke painefull, performing better lucke now then our keepers had before. Abandon were the vanquished with Rosilucas words who accompanied him in the blacke the sole owner of her hart, who made this reply. I doe rather remaine so fearefull of my fortune (most excellent Princess) that seeing howe aduersely she hath still shewen her selfe, will now with newe pain discharge her selfe of this my present (so I feare momentary good, which last, if it be equall to the former, no hart is able to indure the griefe, though mine hath had the power to promise it selfe to be yours untill the latest minute.

And God, how great was the ioy the Lady receaued in answer thinking (tis common amongst them that love) uttered it with the firmenesse of his soules truth, and in words, of course, tending on the ceremonious dutie that kindnes bound him too. They toke their way to the place of a clere bubling brooke that sprang somewhat more in the thicket, minding there to passe the heats of the day, where the Princess seemed the ioyfullest in the world, seeing him goe close to her stirrop whom shee had picke

Part

of the Mirrour of K

her hart, whose silence she thus brake
 knight with your new office, I am
 already repent, to haue it vnder take
 ueraigne Lady) replied the gallant
 sider the supreamacie of the high glo
 haue placed me combinde thereto, &
 imagination of hoping other happin
 do enioy. Whereupon (the beauteous
 thus.) We would not (sir knight) y
 knowledgd it, onely passing with th
 Princesse commaund: he made ans
 teous Lady) hath alwaies byn full o
 tozments, now feling it selfe dischar
 sing load, it straight iudged that fo
 paines yeilding mee this present ext
 which thought, to expell y worse from
 breake into that passion, I call it so,
 ing not continuall) as such a one but
 ing it with such rudenesse, how shoul
 tuall: but oh inconstant chance, why
 when I know this good more then fe
 to an vnterminate end of greater pai
 the accomplishing of your commaund &
 all worth of happines compared: here
 (sir knight) we required not to know
 demanded, for whosoever doth guard
 his hart so exempt of imaginary thoug
 be only busied on the present object of
 such like speeches they arrived to the
 descended, loying to refresh their heat
 nes of the water, or to speake more ap
 presence. The like did the foure Princ
 uering his louely countenance. He w
 pierce the tender brest of the all wound
 knowing who he was) she would not
 ling rather to suffer & liue w her maide

The second Booke of the third Part

himselfe being better mounted they losse their waye in the wood, where they paid full dearely for their presumption, for the furious Tescerreo committing Artemisa to the Spaniards keeping, committed his fortunes to the running of his horse til he met with the as shalbe exprest: returning now to Don Cellindo, who seeing himselfe before his Lady, & that battle to be for her libertie, he couched his launce with such gallantnes, that the Pagan somewhat feared, they encountered with more noise the the meeting of two Rocks: mighty was the Moore, yet notwithstanding receaued he a dangerous wound on his left breast, from whence issued much blood. The gallant Cellindo past forward with losse only of his stirrropes: ere the horse turned againe hee recovered them, and drawing forth Queene Iulias famous blade marcht against his aduersarie, beginning between them one of the fiercest & best fought combate euer made in *Trebizond*. For the warriors being mightie, strong & of lusty courage, gaue & receaued puissant blowes, the one cutting both armor & flesh of the other, & he bruising & tormenting the body of his aduersary within his enchanted armor, which though it tired him, yet he had made the Moore almost faint with losse of blood from his many woundes, receiuing the last, & dangerousest on his breast, with such horroz that it awakened the Lady (which all that while did lie sencelesse & without feeling) who seeing how brauely her knight behaued himselfe, with more ease she sat gazing on the battaile, perswading her selfe hers would be the victorie: but to the unfortunate, euery litle thing is a let to their pretence: For Don Cellindo imagining it would not meanly benefite his loues to bind the Ladies kindnes, by vanquishing that Gigantine knight, made all the hast possible for the Conquest, and in faith for greater matters was his valour sufficient, had not the Goddess of indirect proceedings directed thetherward y Tygrian Beinbo setting him in middest of that faire plaine, when y Prince ended his stroke. Through the velocity of his Courser he quickly ioined with the, & his launce about hand

hee

of the Mi

he acted a deed worthe selfe strongly on his ste taking him ful in y m ker it had pierst him, a side. There is no asking y black dearer th ued therat was Don C ger sayd. It ill besem with y other, to proced the Prince my arm of thy pride. Wild & co gred, but being he ma a hoarse voice he replie ted is in thee audacious we should not stay on of one Lady. And y th those y are discourteou Defend thy selfe, for y right: wherupō w tha forth his magick temp cotained not. Dis requittie himselfe, whose a body, for else in ten th had Beinbo cut him. Lik did they make their ba both, & euery blow o armor was enchanted swords mangled it, cut it in many places with blood that yssued from armor died, & their ho in auoyding, & quick in euery blow was a dians son, & so much th should suffer a valiant w a blow that Beinbo g

The Mirrour of Knighthood.

worthie of the Achayan Lord, for setting him
his stirrups, he darted it to y^e mighty Pagan
in y^e middle of his side, had it byn twice thic
him, a third part therof appered on y^e other
asking whether the blow pleased y^e lady, lo
arer thē her own soule. He y^e to y^e death grie
Don Cellindo, & not able to smother his an
besemed thē (bold knight) seing me in fight
proceede as thou hast done because to liberate
y^e arme was sufficient, needing not y^e ayde
d & courteous was Bēbo befoze he was an
he made his hearers trēble. So somewhat w
replied. The offence if any hath byn cōmit
dacious knight, for doing anothers busines,
ay one for y^e other, either procuring y^e liberty
d y^e thou maist know how I vse to guerdon
urteously arrogant & lauish of their tongue.
, for y^e ones head shalbe witnes of the others
w^{ch} that celerity he in al things vsed, he dyed
tempered blade, better thē which the earth
is requisite that w^{ch} new corage y^e Prince for
pose arme not a litle auails y^e defēce of his
en thousand pēces w^{ch} his Herculean arme
t. Like Lions, Bazalisks, or rauening wolfs
eir battle. Of corage inuincible were they
ow of power to deuide a rocke, for all their
anted, yet their strēgth guiding their sharp
t, cut it away, bruised their flesh, & wōūded
s with dangerous wounds: with y^e crimson
from them was the grasse inamelde their
ir horses all be spinkled. Their nimblenes
icknes in assaultring, w^{ch} their skill shewen
as admirable. The worst of y^e 2 sped Meri
ch that being continued to y^e end, either he
ant death, or scape w^{ch} eternal dishonoz: for
Bo gaue him on his viso, he struck him all
along

18871

3rd Part

hen to) I doe greatly
 he gaze vs, that Treb-
 ough e: not hing more
 and ind. Most So-
 o enjoy I can tell of my
 t madei companye of a
 withoi not telling vs
 which ren Don Cellyn-
 What termed. It shold
 emoted herein I might
 ar withore aptly attri-
 appily i thing I know
 wods. t. The last vn-
 shal bet disease, + be-
 pray th for that argu-
 ese Ferand turning to
 here canour valour you
 ll in armue you also de-
 hen y Geraigne Prin-
 tuate inf your demand
 ers of E, that from my
 who inan ueraigntie o-
 ith 16 B, yet was my
 2 this inilling mee the
 ay, for ary of paines,
 e would pzeame good.
 e loued, Feserreo, with
 ay it be pas dished w
 nowledge had hee met
 ot deferret him no little
 ndance: fir boundnes.
 arkes the t (shūting y
 e barbar here the bro-
 r any ma er the passing
 nglisb Wdey altogether
 hether ther our brauely
 welcomed

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

welcomed them, and the better knowing what had befallen
 them. What intertaynement, or with what pleasure they
 should intertaine the two Princes, they knew not. They
 knewe no more of himselfe then what he had sayd. The
 other neuer declared his name to any but Liriana. There staid
 he right dayes, which was but a momentary instant for the
 Ladye, that by a thousand meanes woulde haue made him
 knowe her affection: but his was so great towards another
 that it woulde not so much as let him marke hers, thinking
 hee had byn staid a whole age in Trebizound. Hee craue
 leaue for his departure to euery ones grieve for hee was lo-
 uing who felt it worse then death, was Rosiluera, though she
 dissembled it: in this she exceld all Ladies of her time. He
 returned to Achaya, where his friend Lupercio expected him
 who to expell his loue of Lyriana from his minde toulde him
 how she was betrothed to one of the valiantest knights of
 world, and of the house of Grecia. It grieved him so extreme-
 ly, that he fell into many infirmities, although the wise man
 with hopes deluded him which was the cause of his recou-
 ry: where we must leaue him, and Don Cellindo, feasting
 in vaine the gallantnesse of his Ladie Rosiluera: because we
 must treat awhile of Claridiano, whome with obliuion we
 haue greatly wronged.

CHAP. XXII.

How Prince *Claridiano* arriued in the Kingdome of *Es-*
clauonia, and what aduentures there befell him.



Affectionate to the valoure of the Black
 Knight departed the Greeke Prince, un-
 able to imagine whom so faire a Lady shold
 bee which hee iudged to remaine within
 that tower enchanted, but as he in sorrow
 progreß, hee woulde with nothing ioy

befallett
are they
The one
The o
re staid
t for the
ade him
another
inking
craued
nas lo
ugh she
e. Vee
d him,
de him
ts of y
treme
se man
ecoue
asting
use we
on we

Es-

lacke
vna
shold
ithin
grow
ioy,
noz

the third Part

ht and feeling: he followe
in him, had he not heard
Ladies, that considering
would not be vngreatfull
e battaile to cease: thin
had the better. She roze
eat hast ranne to him in
my sake sir knight leaue
ild but little profite, and
that with such liberali
ight: he saw (though he
ason in her wordes, and
of Trebizound, although
e, I am content to leaue
he will: (answered shee)
he hath done for me. In
n, in the same he stood a
ect to no more then to o
ne hee replied. My ad
(most faire Princesse) I
e before (not now, this
oueraigne beauty might
th is with my life to bee
Death. In what maner
o small fauour sir knight
use to be respected is the
my attendants come I
ng wee may binde your
eapt, and being Louers
ies. They put of their
th Don Cellindo, more
a constitution, that no
ire to be of him. Shee
tlenesse then Venus did
not been slaine. These
r Cupids amorous host
did

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

did knowe, sat them downe together vnder the couert
spreading mirtle. Where, oh loue, who may haue a ton
so exquisite sharpened in skill to accoꝝd thy discoꝝdes and
der thy disorders? In what dost thou delight thou scou
of humane liues. To see the youthfull Don Cellindo
his eyes, and thoughts on the beauteous Ladye, making
noꝝishment to his heart, and all other thinges, but to
hers, to accompt, a death, a plague, a toꝝment: oꝝ to beh
the Lady free of his paine, to explicate with her two earth
Sunnes the cause that doth augment hers, within her se
suffering a Thousand toꝝmentes all of loue proceeding of
uing the *Achayan* Bembo: to drawe y pleasure for her son
from him, to Don Cellindos cost: who noting with his
diciall eyes with what affection the Princesse woulde c
hers vpon his aduersarie, it was moze then eternall pay
which he suffered, then which the hel of Loue wherein h
liued, he Iudged could yeild no greater. Joyest thou destr
er of the vniuerse (not sparing the little, little corner of r
inuried hart) to see the ingreatfull More iest at Rosilucra, h
uing his thoughts there, but his soule with Liriana, in th
living with ioye, but of the other hauing onely of all his p
wers, his body there on the plaine, casting his eyes aloft v
on the toꝝwing Cypresses, and odoriferous mirtles: Don
comfort was this to Meridians Sonne, for to himselfe y
sayde. It was not possible hee should loue where his sig
did not gaze thereon. Oh valiant Princes who might plea
you, displeasing neither, pardon, oh pardon mee sweete L
dies, for my long progressing through y pathes of loues si
cere puritie, for Don Cellindo gazing on her he loues, & sh
on him, she had afore her on the other side, made y last vie
ing her beautie, iudge it but a parcell, oꝝ an abstract dra
en from the perfect modell of Lirianas perfections on whor
his imaginations did feede, accompting the greatest euil f
her sake to be his chiefeest ioy.

The Lady spake (for in loue discourses they haue great
power in this war of Venus, then Hector amonge Mars h

uert of a
a tongue
s and oꝝ
a scourge
lindo fire
aking it
ut to bee
to behold
o earthly
her selfe
ing of loꝝ
her soule
his Ju
ulde cast
l payne
rein hee
destroi
er of my
uera, ha
in this
l his po
aloft vp
Some
selfe hee
his sight
t please
ete La
ues sin
s, & shee
t view
Draw
whome
euil foꝝ
greater
ars his
opes)

The seco

noꝝ in any delight
uerse with pleasur
disgrace. He cross
the Coast of Panon
ted bark furrowed
till the Tenth day
where he leapt on
he might demaund
phirus he mounted
honour wonne at t
zited. His Heroy
Somme of Mars, th
ryed at his backe,
Weuer vp. In thi
passions, he toke i
hee had not far go
comming, as fast
him, demaunding
he could, oꝝ would
beeing abashed w
launce aboue hand
ing. Now discour
what I intreated
did he set the pike
with death if he to

Wardon me (si
thus foꝝget my sel
clauonia very nere
time the king kee
selfe in the world.
led the second Ven
the Mother of Wor
an Sophi became a
thers no lesse migh
so affectionate to
ded Lycense to ke

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

lorie deserues to bee beloued of her, and none like
ie her. It is knowen she nothing respectes him as
for which cause many do aduenture against him:
vnequall, and vniust is the fight, in that yf any o-
es them all with y launce, they altogether assault
uerour with their swords, and they being so vali-
in the enterprize haue lost their liues, and others
ne, amonge the last was a couzen of the Prince of
hat at the third incounter was ouerthrowen: So I
g to aduertize the Prince my Lord thereof, that no
the Siconian doteth on the beauteous Venus, who
ine aduenture was stayed at the Sea coast where
ded, with two fierce Gyants to guard him: hym
o call to reuenge the misfortune of his couzen. This
t is all I knowe of this Country, in which I haue
oure dayes. The Prince greatlye thanked him
ation, and parting from him, entred to passe the
he day among those bzaunched trees, from whence
a spring, wherein he washt his face and drunke of
r, vnbryd ling his horse that he might feede on the
For himselfe, would he no other fode, but the glozy
ughts. Appon the grasse hee laye himselfe alonge
g forth his soule in sighes, which still with euerye
seemed to increase to the Louers good, where he be-
end the eyes of his imaginations, through y vast
ssions, wherein he was ouerwhelmed, thinking y
nd little his life consumed, remembryng how dis-
y Queen of Lyra had reiected him, louing her more
selfe, and not able to conceaue, wherein he had of-
r. Hee had no other comfort then to exclaime on
because he was his vassayle, but that he had made
fortunate, as that although hee had admitted the
aine for his speciall consolatiō, yet it was pro-
om her knowledge: which cōsideration bereft him
s, but that he set his hopes on Galtenor, to procure
e meanes for his redresse. A while to ease his sor-

The second

troopes) sir Knight (to
desire you would com
zound may know her
then to obey her can th
ueraigne Princeesse th
name, is to knowe no
Sister of mine a wise
who we are, but that
do, though now the fo
seeme they suspected th
doe you some seruice,
buted to the valour of
not of my selfe, no; ha
derstood the Lady as
cause she would not g
ment she thanked him
her soule sayde. See
haue obtained to be m
clare your name vnto
resse) am I bound to
I knowe lesse the this
minozitie I haue ack
uer mee, and for all
name giuen me contr
vnfortunate. I am
hauing reserved for
As the Lady was ab
signes that hee had fe
fresh blood of others.
with the 4 knights,
trouble, but in the en
He toke by the Lady
prolittie of their gr
thers of Spaine & Arto
of some iests between
went to the house of

od.

Whose win-
ates, though
(so was the
mselfe proud
est thinge y
place, for y
his horse, so
use. Which
gyants had
ge his Cou-
te the same,
laughter se-
others had
turning a-
the launce
beeing of a
ared at the
his Wor-
comended
e: who like
uro. They
g waters
tant were
ls the bet-
his hāds.
attles but
it, saying
e we both
yn, were
sary dyd
ince of
y azure
battle, &
Least a-
nded, to
D: verie
neare

The second Booke of the third Part

row, he would communicate it, to the gentle buzing wind,
and flowzed field, with more grace and swētnesse, then the
famoused Thracian Poet. To strengthē his voice, and helpe
his thoughts, he sate him downe vnder a Beech, not farre
from the spring, singing thus.

*Suspicious doubts that in my amorous minde;
Do still make warre against my good opposed:
Sometimes I happie victorie doe finde:
Ouer the mortall euill me inclosed.
Sometimes you immitate the angrie Dame:
To banish me my Ioy, from her sweet name.
Yet happie be my thoughts, more happie I:
Thinking her present in my miserie.*

*Who hath not ioy'd in woes, and smilde in paine?
Seing his Ladie, causer of his grieffe?
Who is't of any sorrow doth complaine?
Hauing his Loue at hand to yeild reliefe.
Who hath not been preferu'd? who ere destroy'd?
The title of true Loue that ere enioy'd?
Hauing to witnes of his mortall paine:
She that can only rich him by her gaine.*

*There is no good compared to her presence,
Without her, sorrow sollace doth confound:
In whome we well know by experience:
The Louer findes a salue for his deepe wound.
As by her presence heauie harts are eased:
So by her absence harts sores are increased.
Since none may therefore line an absent life:
Pittie, oh pittie loue, and end this strife.*

Here brake of y^e Greeke wth many sobs, & pitifull grones, gi-
uing a beginning to his lamēts in this maner. O tēder yeres,
to to much tried on y^e tuch-stone of my ladies coyne: O cru-
elty, shewē against none but him y^e liues by louing, ioying in
nothing

ood.

aigne Quene,
tutor in no
y perfections:
anish me from
ou lose admie
ie: I did not
lous me, & co
ue, & languish
d in this: But
will reioyre in
have & do feele
noyse he heard
ose to see what
reat hast came
ayd. Did you
nder alone, so
frō your Cou
hem doth feele
e causes are y
inst fortunes
ace, requires
ng moze cora
f fauour was
s of his pati
toz Galtenor,
hich was the
i, you should
r mind, for al
pes were ne
r him, longer
te Archifilora
aning her, wh
, y according
ous tryūphs.
you hers: for
was there,
to you was.

As

The

neere appro
ans part tho
en in the Ju
grea'ly affec
and so neere
gine him hor
haue her, al
bout it made
uerthelesse h
onely that h
horse and sh
rious rage sh
sayd. Potiv
decreade not
spect, & hono
pinion the k
this being y
procuring th
wanted to I
thre knights
remaine var
hath iudged
not vfed. Th
ing Pollidol
dozs of the bl
ted the strong
hearing the C
ill besemes t
hath iudged.
thers was y
that he reply
swered. With
& allowe for
spoken thou
strangers cor
moze courtes

The second Booke of the third Part

approched the Greeke determined to take the Croati-
t thought it shold cost him his life, for his valor shew-
the Iustes had drawen his affection. So did the Kinge
affect Lindauro, & because he was so great a Prince,
were neighbour to him, it had moued him in secret to
in hope of his Daughter Venus that none but he shold
er, although y lady one day her father talked w hir a-
made answere contrary to her fires expectations. Ne-
lesse he would not openly disgrace the stranger, but
hat hee could not proceede farther in fight, losing his
nd shield. Forward came the angry Greeke with fu-
rage shaking like an aspen leafe, & lifting vp his Beuer
Notwithstanding y against what so wise a king hath
e nothing ought to be sayd, neuerthelesse (sauing y re-
honor due to your imperiall Crowne & state) in my o-
the knight may continue his battailes to the end, for
ing y last, it is certaine it went at al aduenture, either
ing the maintenance of his owne fame. If there any
d to Iust yet were there in this difficulty, resting in y
nights choice to assault him on foote o: other wise, but to
ne vanquished at least wout his horse, your maiestie
udged it. & it may be the best, yet in my countrey it is
ed. This highly gladded the beauteous Venus who see-
llidolphos haughty deedes was visited by y Embassa-
f the blinde God. There stood a knight y was accomp-
e strongest in all Slaunonia, a kinsman of y kings, who
g the Grecks speeches, slept forth w these wordes. It
emes the knight to repugne what my Lorde y Kinge
udged. Incompassed round about with knights and o:
was y mighty Alphebos sonne, which was some cause
e replied with moze meekenes then he would, & so an-
d. What the king hath decreede (sir knight) I approue
e for good, but if vpon thy proude & arrogant wordes
n thou darest accept this my gage, Ile teach thee that
ers comming to serue kings ought to be intreated w
courtesie. In this kingdome (sayd the third Brother &
the

of the Mirrour

the valiantest) must not be a
demaunde, but rather such
troublers of the Court. The
passe, hee presumed on
durst, answering. Discourte
thereupon that thou mayst k
thou mayst enter to the battl
of thy bzetheren, for the pro
mended with lesse the all you
admired eury one iudging i
any other vndertaking it bu
but be called wil-ful temeriti
copt w Milo. The king allo
ring to be reuenged on the k
not accompting it cowardise
one for himselfe, would vnde
knowing the challenger) it
grace them sayde. Knights it
ted reasons to refuse the bat
wardlyke then valiant. Thi
vpon mighty hozses, set the se
Now Mercury would I faine
lineaments of this braue bat
were but blunt, for either is a
against one sole aduersary: v
the five warriours then the r
rie Thunder-bolt.

The earth neuer saw a
ter, for eury one thinking to
met him with such fiercenes,
hit by so many was a help to
tormented his body w the str
for few greater incounters ha
selfe valiantly, & wout makin
seate he met y first brother w
fly from his saddle, w his pro

The sec

Is it possible fr
by greues to se
a good brings w
neuer had any
no, that was bo
sand things dem
adozne it. Son
kinsfolkes were
of. Great comf
made the Consi
soules thoughts
ning of his pain
was the care his
By this it was
toke their next
tising Palisandro
were, more ther
discourse they di
ra, when about
the reuerberatin
gilded their plu
made them ama
hath Panonia: or
ter, and on the so
moted with an
is beleued) that
the Kings heere
this now was, a
for gallantnes an

The path whi
bridge, whose pa
did defend. It w
middelst therof wa
and his brothers
ending with a la
tailes, which the

18871

second Booke of the third Part

e friend Palisandro (said the Prince) that my la-
 to see me absent? I cannot beleue it, for so great
 is with it an incredulitie. He imbrast him, for
 my Prince a moze discreter squyre, except Alli-
 as bozne according to Rosabells humoꝝ. A thou-
 demaunded he of the Court, whose presence did
 Some grieve was to him hearing that all his
 were there missing, not knowing the cause there-
 comfort did hee conceaue by seeing him, hee had
 Consistorie, within whose secrecie he recoꝝded his
 ights: imagining his companie would be a lesse-
 s paines, but that, which most did mittigate it,
 re his Foster-father Galtenor had to succour him.
 was time to trauaile, so getting a horse-backe,
 next way to the famous Citie of Zantho, aduer-
 andro he should by no meanes discover what they
 re then that he was called the persecuted knight,
 hey did of many things, and the most of Archiblo-
 about two of the clocke after midday the rayes of
 erating sunne vpon the stony walles of the Cittie,
 eir plumed toppes, whose stupendious buildings
 n amazed with admiration. On the north side it
 onia: on the west Istria, on the East Mysia the grea-
 n the south the Adriaticke sea. The wall was round
 th an arme of the famous Gersian riuer, where (it
 d) that Iupiter first fell in Loue, and therefore did
 s heere neuer want most beautifull daughters, as
 was, accounted the woꝝlds matchlesse Paragon
 nes and beautie.

th which they hadde taken brought them vnto the
 hofe passage the Siconians Don with his bretheren
 . It was admirable in woꝝkmanshippe, for in y
 erof was edified a stately pallaice, where y prince
 others lodged. It reached vnto the Cittie wall,
 th a large and great plains, payled in for the bat-
 ich the Siconian had comanded there to be made,
 because

of th

because that wand vnto
 doles might thees rest
 not with such afwed it.
 Prince named) hem no
 and insolent beihonour
 Ladies doe abhoell the,
 Græke heard thi
 did his Page, to
 was for that the he
 entred the bꝛidge
 zens disgrace, wi
 that euery one behll will
 ing him with so mlinge,
 Pollidolpho Prin Græke
 gainst the fourth, hypcius
 dyding from his woꝝthy
 knotty Wake ere ilof ver
 other side, tumblin know
 thers extreme grieſ he al
 the azure knight, the sight
 an angry Lyon manst his
 met with moze ferr Judg
 beating within theas the
 the louers, but bothe bro
 ter was the Croatiauteous
 Recouer would he lmitred
 the Judges on Lindia. No
 he was vanquishd. was no
 fel on our feet. Thatz fairer
 bound not to leaue y reputd
 lose his. To that pationate
 Croatias gyants stephen to
 was not ouercome, he place
 that they would maifoule of
 ny dangerous tumult so cal
 whom the Judgemener selfe
 in

The second Booke of the third Part

side: he turned vpon the thre that with some feare sta
him, seeing how mighty he had shewē himselfe againe
All in the place were struck as in a traunce with admir
especialy whē they saw him in y^e yel^{ow}, how wth his
in one hand, & shield in another, he thrust himselfe am
enemies, with far greater courage then if he had to de
with one. In his charge with that good sword that Ga
had giuen him he struck the Kings couzen vppon his h
All his plumes he cut away, with the top thereof, woun
him most dangerously on the head: he could not defend
selfe of them all, for the brothers at once, laid vpon his
netrable helme, the which although they could not ra
forst they him to make an vnpleasing musike with his
bowing his head below his brest. Thzough rage y^e Ele
nian cōceaued to be wounded he discharged on the Gree
shoulder al his strength, it so tormēted him y^e he could
hold his shield. The other two second it wth seuerall th
It was their aduantage for the second brother quickly
red againe stryking him vnder the right arme. The s
chancst to light outwardly els it had mortally wounded
for it fell betwene the buckling of the armor nere the
It wounded him, though but little, yet altogether to
Greeke on the spurs of furie. Being once at this point
tenor saith being he y^e Cronicle his acts) he was fear
be beheld. Vee manifested it, for not regarding th
thrust (which put him to great paine) he flozished his
among the thre. He could not misse the Kings couzen
ting away al his armor on y^e side with a piece of y^e shie
ward past the blowe lighting on the second brothers
wounding him there very dāgerously, & also the blod y^e
hindzed his eie-sight. He turnd with a counterbuste v
third (this was the strongest of them) it beate him v
horse without feeling. The king seing it cried out ama
O Saturne (what haughty corage is this of one knight)
in oh mighty loue haue I offended thē, that thou sh
send him hithir to shame, & disgrace my Court: for al t

18871

Part

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

lot of fayntnes shewed the other twoo , beating on
his helme like an anuell, which seemed to be of a light fier
so many sparkes flue from it. Seing with what valour that
knight defended the azures part, the second Venus shewed her
selfe moze faire then did the first, when shee Courted young
Adonis in the wood, from the window she looked, glad that y
azure knight withdrew not his eyes from her casement, per
swading her selfe she might be sure of his faith. In a won
derfull fight were the twoe with the Graeke louer, when y
third brother, recouering himselfe, & casting his shield at his
backe went to him . He assailed him on the sodaine, & ther
fore stryking him at his pleasure, executing y brauest blowe
he did in all his life : for he tooke him on the very top of hys
helme with such strength that he fell on his horse necke. All
of the followed the chase, laying on him most cruell blows .
The new-come would faine haue closed within the Graeke,
& so offered it. It had byn very ill for Claridiano because of y
others, so he auoyded it, by spurring his swift Courser ma
king him leape from them. After him followed the two rea
ching him together on his swords arme. It was a venturous
blowe , for it so paind it that he could not stir it. There
was none in the place but perceaued it, nor anye but excee
dingly grieued thereat, especially Pollidolpho in his soule ,
who gazed on the battle with such affection as if he were his
brother. Their good fortune did his enemies imbrace, wout
feare entring, and salying, hammering his soule moze then
his body, so great was y wzath kindled in his furious brest.
By little and little he felt the paine diminish : Aswell as he
might he defended himselfe, not without mighty blowes of
the three, that to make an end drew strength from their fain
ting, for he had wounded the dangerously. At length feeling
himselfe free of the dāger, faining neuerthelesse the cōtrary,
he suffered the secōd brother to enter for he was most eager.
When he was so neare he could not scape him, hee raysed a
lost his reuenging arme, with moze strength, then wyth
wheeles the mightiest burthens are crayned vpp, & with as

Booke of the third Part

r any wrong by her Father on Lin.
uld be no lesse then her death: For
ell of the pride, were with he had, &
goodwill. A thousand times was
Greeke, that as a Louer (euery one
his cruell deuise) he might seeke
an euill as she expected by the ma-
odest as beautifull (for in this she
) So durst she not write, believing
z, & staine y reputatiō, they of her
taine in all their actiōs, rather in-
, then by their doinges, to giue the
sudge of their liues, when they
for others to modell out y course
her, suffering euery day many im-
Father seing her obstinacie, com-
me herselfe with patience, for he
will to that, whereto all his coun-
put her to her shifts that she had
to the knight in yellow, trusting
ne she thought would keepe it se-
wledging great dutie, for the re-
h consequence. All the knights
excepting Pollidolphos two Gy-
ose of, carefully watching what
those affaires, For they knew
ire Venus: Wherefore the Da-
one as it was darke y she might
y knights that kept together,
here the knight in yellow was:
ucted her vnto them, to whome
(after salutations she said.) Sir
urs that you will not denye it
ue neede thereof, I am boulde
whose name this Letter doth
airing knight, glad, that be-
ing

of the M

ing able, he will not p
with great courtesie sh
saying, she would the r
And staying no longer
Dis scarce possible to
the Prince of Croatia i
nus, that seing the haug
so his faire constitutiō
him therof by that me
dumps, calling him s
with anothers hand. I
by requireth, that shou
strengthening her necc
vs thereby to lose our l
proceeding of your
knight) to procure that
lidolpho) and from this
did the Greeke, and o
the name: neuer theles

The Pr

[Maging, valiant dis-
deuise is iniustly perm
wer of loue, rooted in a
to the harme, acknowle
wise I write (yet assured
immodest wantonnesse
of paine excepting that
shalt thou knowe the w
marrying me against m
oh what death is it to f
estate, that I must rathe
though a daughters obe
it is an offence and capit

the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Will not permit her in indure any outrage. So
telle she deliuered y letter vnto the Græke,
to the next morrowe returne for an answer.
longer kindly tooke her leaue and departed.
ble to expresse the alteration that surprisid
oatia imagining the letter came from Ve-
e haughty deedes which he had done, and al-
itutiō, she was enamored of him, certifying
at meanes. The Græke put him frō those
him saying. In the end hee was wounded
and. Lets see (braue Prince) what this Las-
t should haue no small neede of our succour,
necessity with our weake helpes, binding
e our line in her defence? It will bee an act
our magnanimitie (haughty dispayzing
e that none suffer any iniurie, (replied Pol-
in this time doe I offer my person. The like
and opening the Letter were amazed to see
thelesse he read it thus.

The Princeesse Venus Letter to Claridiano.

ant despairing Knight (to whom that name &
permitted) thou art come to knowe the po-
d in a true hart, and how it onely repaires vn-
knowledging the causer: vnable to doe other-
ssured that my Letter will denote me of some
nesse) for the lawes of Loue, frees euery one
g that which from it doth proceede. By this
the wronge my Father intendes to doe mee
nt my will to a husband of his choise. But
t to see, that Fortune should bring me to the
rather loose my life, then obey his cōmande,
s obedience binds me thereto: but doing it,
capitall crime which I do cōmit against my

The second Booke of the third Part

ch rage as courage hee discharged it on his helme, the
ch downe to the shoulders with his head was clouen.
eat was the noise that sodenly aroze in the place with the
ghts death, thinking the like would happen to the rest.
e like presumed y^e king so did Lindauro, that bloody teares
shed for the losse of the brothers. Redoubled was their
se, for Archisiloras louer imagining he too long deferred y^e
: flung at the Kings Couzen wounding him with such a
w, that sencelesse he cast him forwards on his horse neck,
an against him with his Coursers best, tumbling him
s horse on the stony pauement more dead the aliuie. The
d brother would defend himselfe, but the Prince thin-
g it vnmeet to assault him, did close casting his strong
es about him wherewith he pluck him from his saddle, &
ring his horse went to y^e bridge side offering to cast him
the riuer ouer the railles: whereat the King cried out to
he should not doe it, for he gaue him the victorie of the
t, accompting him the best knight vpon the earth. To do
r Maiestie some seruice which is my sole desire (answe-
the Prince) I am content to do it, although his rude in-
litie deserues a farre greater punishment. Thanks for
same did the king giue, receauing him with better coun-
ince then will, for he would haue giuen any great prize
e had miscarried in the battaile. To him went the cou-
ous Prince Pollidolpho, saying.

Due Guerdon you for me (sir Knight) what this day you
e on my behalfe performed, which is so much, y^e I know
ow I may seeme gratefull for the least of the same, but
any thing my life and my companions bee needefull
our seruice, dispose of them, for we will offer & ymploye
with as great willingnes as you this daye haue done
s for vs, hauing not deseured it at your handes. The
ke replied knowing him to be whom the Knight hadde
. This & far much more then I haue done is due to your
lenes, & bounty (great Prince) for there is none (know-
g what it is) but remaineth ingaged thereto, and there-
fore

of the Mirro

fore may you accompt m
fayned friends. The Prin-
ing so affectionate vnto h
They accompanied the k
god will more then wha
them, inuicing them vnto
what the next Chapter n

C H

What befell vnto the
King in



Although
within
plead
Prince
dice of
of respo
tue & good parts (by how
ledg of y^e same) (bryght fa-
most forgot it, inclining
of his valour shewen,
foure enemies, that he r-
mentes did affect him.
griefe Lindauro didde
thers, & himselfe disgrac-
Venus disdain towards
esteeming it equall to hi
lesse admiration caused
Dame but enuied his fa-
then Venus (hee was th
they the Croatian Polli-
the Princeesse was beco
speake wth him, that hee
his hart had obtained
the amity he had cōtra-
led they y^e Greeke) imag

Mirroure of Knighthood.

apt me as one of your true, sure, and
e Prince acknowledged the kindne
unto him that in all things he she
to the King, who though hee bare t
what hee ought, would not but
n unto his Court, where there be
after mentioneth.

CHAP. XXIII.

unto the Greeke Prince being with th
ing in his great Hall,

though the cankered Rancoz of
within the brest of the Esclauonian
leaded against the merits of the
ince by reason of his challenge in
ce of his decree, yet so louing, &
f respect is the very & sole opinion
y how much y more the y triall, &
ght saints of idolatrized beauty) y
ning so much unto him through th
en, and honour obtayned agay
t he regarded, and in the common
him. On y other side extreame v
dde conceale, wanting the th
sgrast, attributing thereto the bea
ards him, whose beauty y greeke a
l to his Ladies the Queene of Lyr
aused his in Court, that there v
his fairenes, iudging he yet wa
as there a Noueltie. As hee, so v
Pollidolpho, whose truelye affec
become, desiring nothing more t
t hee might knowe her will and th
ned within her brest, glad in her
stracted with y despairing knight
imagining she might securely put t

of the third Part

me I haue sacrificed it, I am
der of armes to protect and
dressed Ladies, thou wilt led
neede thereof: And so shall
ne feare, to execute what ere
knowne of all who it is that
a Resolution by thy answer,
breft. The Gods haue thee
re ioy then eyther I haue, or

The Princeſſe Venus,

inces (having read & let
d in them of ſo waightie a
t auoyd without great ad
: well had the Greeke vi
and thinking he that way
ingly doth Fortune fauour
ch meanes ordred the put
y: And I bove neuer to
it not, although more per
were. Moſt excellēt knight,
nted mee to meeete you that
uld take pittie of the ſame.
e, for theſe magnanimous
ate in your handes, to go
pleaſure, for that will bee
n your direction. Why the
remedie, the to remoue fro
wen himſelfe your cōpeti
cted, it will be good we ad
Fathers requeſt, and I
lenge him, procuring his
life. Afterwards it will
e Pallatice: but for this it
number of men, for it is
ne conflict with the kings
people

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

people: whereto he replied. That is already prouyde
my couzen (I being with onely my twoe Gyants dep
from my Kingdom) came to ſeēke mee with twelue
ſand men, well armed and couragious for anye dang
erployte. This ynough (answered the Greeke) to ſet
the Seas, where wee will defende her maugre all
ſtrength. With this agreement they concluded their
course, wherewith Pollidolpho remayned the gladd
the worlde, ſeing howe well his affaires were order
wards the procurement of his ioyes. The war-like G
writ his anſwere, deliuering it to the Damozell y mi
to come for it, carrying it ſtraight to her Lady, that w
ny pittifull lamentations beſeched the Gods they woul
permit ſo vniuſt a marriage, but rather to end her ſor
full dayes which ſhould bee her greateſt good, that liue
empt of all content. Though ſhe receaued it exceeding
y Greeke Princes letter, whoſe ſeales hauing rent op
contayned this effect.

*Claridiano's Letter to the
Princeſſe Venus.*

SO great is the wrong (moſt excellent Princeſſe) done vnto
beauty & ſo much the duty I acknowledge vnto Ladies (th
uing not written, but only giuing me the leaſt notice of thy care
things had put me in the greateſt that I euer conceaued, to pr
(venturing therein the hazard of my life) that in nothing
ſhouldeſt ſuſtayne iniurie and thereof liue ſecure, that
this thy afflicted Knight dooth liue, ſo vnequall a Ma
ſhall not be effected. And the better to perſourme it,
needfull you giue your graunt vnto your Father; doe it
out anye feare: For eyther I will looſe my lyfe, or Lin
ſhall not one daye enioye the name (hee dooth not deſer
to bee thyne. The Gods haue thee alwayes in their kee

d.

ouyded : for
ts departed
clue Thou
e dangerous
to set her on
re all their
d their dys-
gladdest in
ordered to
ke Græke,
l y mist not
that w ma
e would not
er sorow
at liued ex
eding with
ent open, it

ne unto thy
es (that ha-
ycare) both
to procure,
othing thou
that whylst
Marriage
me it, it is
doe it with-
r Lindauro
deserue it)
r keeping,
and

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

He was in extreme dāger though at his feet there lay 10
All were not sufficient to defend Trebatios Nepheus
had not an Uncle of the Ladies, her Mothers brother,
so greatly grieved at the marryage, although he dissem-
it by reason of the King) that being affectionated to the
ke, (seeing his gallantnesse and valour) thinking that
m(though he were worth but one horse & armour) his co-
might with greater honour match then with the proude
auto. He arose and went straight to the King, that in
st cryed for more ayd. In all thinges did the Kinge
it this his brother, who thus spake.

Thy fame for Justice (most mighty King) is spread ouer
the earth, and therefore haue the Gods magnified thee,
ing thee happy with such a Daughter as thou hast, and
verour of so large a Monarchy: Let not then the con-
of rash wrath (which by other meanes may be reueng-
e at this time the occasion of the wracke of thy supreme
ur till now euer increased, for which thou art bound by
ice to giue euerye one his due: and therefore suffer not
er Knight to be slaine with such vnequall aduantage,
ng giuen no cause for it, and thou oughtest to maintaine
ight. These wordes tooke such impression in the King,
without more adoe he call his warder in the hall, that
y one might withdraue: and taking his brother in law
e hand, went towards the Greeke that was wounded
any places whose paine he felt not, so gret was his con-
eured rage: but seeing the King comming, he withheld
word saying. I had not thought (mighty Prince) in
allace he should be suffered to indure any wrong, that
ed nothing more then to serue thee, soly expecting this
to doe it. It behoued him to saye so, seeing his ma-
dāger, & being in place where he could not vse his own
. Come w me knight (sayd the King) & I will doe you
for it hath not a litle greued me, this tumult shold haue
len on this day, which I hoped for my grettest content:
vnder

The se

and with good succ

The teares of i
dāce w her soule
on her behalfe, ca
ioyed in the sozro
any might accom
he had on another
whome the second
more loyalty then
louer. Almost w
her, for the Sycon
his importunities
ding how well it b
test Princes of the
might moue her to
red. Deare fath
Prince, more then
ded my deserts to r
so tender is my age
that I thought I
the same, by vnder
Peueerthelesse seei
will be done, for no
father imbrast her
ted which he though
ed through the Citti
ned by the Citizens.
solernized and inuit
his hart to haue (as
to haue the despairin
his haughty deeds.
mentations of many
Dine in his great hal
dies apart. At once

18871

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

seen more nobility, for besides the King, there was Clea-
Pzinces, some disguised & some wounded with loue were
to see the beauteous Venus, imagining in their Count-
s that she which had such a name could not, but in beauty
enus her selfe. This Lady bride came for hal in white,
which couloz was the Pzince also attired, with all his pa-
with so costly & rich ornaments y^t it was well scene loue
his instructor. After dinner (hauing sat to it something
y^t ere their reuealing began) they Comenst discourse
uerall matters. Verry nere Lindauro sat y^t Crake pzince
wth his sword, & dagger, cloathed in yellow & black, a de-
which wonderfully became him. About that quarter, be-
all youths, & in y^e May of their yeres, & Ladies seruitors
sc their argument euery one to prayse y^e beauty he had
or most affected. The Pzince Pallidolpho knowing who
Crake was, & assured that y^e Crakeish beauty admitted
comparatiue wth the world beside, set a foote (praying y^e
ies of Grecia) y^e grettest tumult y^e euer there was seen: for
lauro wth his accustomed pride, thinking heemight there
t speake, answered: That may b^e to them that knowes
y^e god of Esclaunia, noz canot conceaue it: but to them y^e
without partiall affection, there is nothing faire on the
y^e noz absolute but here. The amorous Crake with the
sight of Venus was so transported in y^e contemplation
s Lady, that he had scarce vnderstode what had bin dis-
sed, but rather gaue occasion of a farther mischiese, by
y^e that burst from his hart, which made euery one note y^e
e y^e posselt him. Well did Lindauro perceauie it, & hauing
eath of y^e brothers Wicking in midst of his hart thought
y^e so many as there was to take his part, hee coulde by
eanes scape his hands, sayd to him. What haue you
espairing Wnight, for in such a place as this, more lyke
ight, the other wise must the faith sacrificed to the Lady
proued. The Pzince had already vnderstood what had
ventilated, and hearing himselfe so plainely taunted wth
rdise, was mightily incensed with wozath: he refraynd
it.

The second Booke of the third Part

Under your royall woozd, I will doe it (replied Clarid trusting that if I haue any excuse it shall auaille me. not y (sir knight said Venus Uncle) for on my perill hee you not receaue any moze wzong. To him commaunded King, he and Pollidolpho should deliuer their swords, though his wounds was not able to stirre. Of him ha Kings brother in law charge, to the Princes extreame row thinking his sundzing from the Greeke would b untimely death. Hee was deceaued, for the Ladie ha much care of him as if he were in her chamber shewin Uncle manifest tokens that she loued the Croatian w nothing displeased him, thinking he was a knight of accompt, & exceedingly reioyced when afterwards he h how great a Prince hee was. The Greeke they comm to a strong tower not farre from the Ladies lodging, i custodie a Couzen of the Kings had, that like a good k caused him to be well cured though he was so weake c lost blood, that he could not arise from his bed, yet his a and rage moze tormented him then his wounds, arry a thousand times at the point of death only for that he not come to be reuenged on the trecherous Lindauro. for all he was wounded, thought it well imployed, in ning they could not from thence escape without death uerlasting infamie. For which intent he one day se sent for the King of the Cremonian Isle, the mightiest t that was knowen on the earth, for with one sonne w a little before he had knighted, he had banquished great Hosts. He was in peace and had contracted le with them: and aduertising them the necessitie he h their helpes, with foure knights of their kindzed they thether in poast, and sending Lindauro wozd of their uall, they did what the ensuing Chapter doth relate.

thood.

Knights challen-
it happened.

onders of heauens
irations of earthly
s passion rooted in
ouer, that it for-
spect of proper ho-
ngs manifestly as
it tramples with
iding the affection
which hauing ob-
minandum as abso-
which only guides
in ptesence of hys
Brothers dayne, &
onate desire of be-
right-hood, he pro-
n vniust reuenge
nded to his euer-
e conferred it to
e, and by Justice
clined to his in-
nated thereto by
alour the pince
ould dare to en-
nined, one daye
e great hall, clad
there was none
ough they were
so stronge com-
that plainly
s.

The second Booke of the third Part

it, yet not so, but he was forced to this reply. My thought ending the imaginarie consideration of my Ladies perfection & seeing the wrong the world commits against her, notwithstanding to her the supremacie of all excellencies, I acknowledged it with a sigh: But least you shoulde thinke I haue hands, or dare not maintaine my words, I here define to mortall battaile, where thou shalt see, that if I now shew my selfe milde through the gallantnes of the loue, in field I am fiercer then an angred Lyon, being tye'd with her beautie. Nere him was the Brother who with like confidence of being there, spake thus.

In these parts, and chiefly in this Kingdome any challenge is prohibited, in time of peace, and he is worthy to be punished, that led by an inordinate passion of pride doth disturbe it. The most in the hall agreed with therein, being also approued by the kings Nephew, and that but the night before was come thither. The King himselfe did ratifie it, whose Guard expected no more to be violent hands on the twoo Princes to imprison them: it was to their euill, for the Greeke like an Hyrcanean Tyger leapt from his place, & drawing forth his sword would haue made an end of him, but that the Brother interuened, wounding the Prince a little on the arme, & thrust at his shoulder so furiously, that sencelesse hee fell him at his fete. At this time was not the Croatian idling on the ground before him two of those Princes though himselfe were wounded: well did the Greeke cease it, banning his fortune, to be without armour, in spite of them all he had scape them: he had no other choice but taking his friend behind him, betooke himselfe to the doore that went vnto the Ladies chamber. They all followed them, especially the beauteous Venus, that with a flood of blood celebrated the wonders which the Prince performed at the doore, backt by her gallant Louer. So great was the increased multitude which encompassed the Prince

Th

The King
sayd. My
conia we h
strange b
solence co
bilitie and
howe tho
gaynst off
but to erec
And so op
Whatsoeu
will I del
made then
would not
in my Cou
the vniue
my Coun
is no more
thereof.

Well
drift, and
uing that
beauteous
her owne
so false a
weake and
rye felwe
Straight
for, and w

Somet
that being
customed
any furth
his Justic
counsell, v
inuiolate

The second Booke of the third Part

he Father rayling his viso: with a hollowe voyce thus
 . Mighty Potentate of Eiclaunonia, in our Land of Sy-
 a we heard of some braules thou hast had with certaine
 ge Knights, and this daye was it toulde vs their in-
 ce committed in thy presence, killing some of thy No-
 ie and wounding our Prince Lindauero, and mozeouer
 e thou hast promised to deale with them by lawe: a-
 ust offendours to Princes states no such respecte is due,
 o execute the power of consuming wrath vppon them.
 so vppon the one, and the other wee desie two Knights
 tfoeuer that will vndertake the battaile, by the same
 I defende they woorthely deserue a cruell death: Wee
 e them sit downe knowing who they were, saying. I
 ld not (braue Gyants) for any thinge haue it sayd, that
 y Court Justice is lesse obserued then in anye other of
 vniuerse, and therfore did I referre this cause vnto
 Counsell: but seeing you haue challenged them, there
 o moze but to admitte your challenge, aduertising them
 eof.

Well did Alanio the Princeesse Uncle vnderstode the
 t, and by whome that complotte was ordayned, grie-
 g that so great iniustice shoulde bee permitted. The
 teous Venus did nothing but weepe, purposing with
 owne handes rather to sacrifice her life then to wedde
 lse a Knight. At length came the twoo Princes so
 ke and faint, that they were not able to stande, be-
 cuse there were in the Hall, but greatly did pittie them.
 aight was it toulde them the cause why they were sent
 and what those Knights demaunded.

Some what was the Prince moued with their sight, but
 being past as long it lasted not, hee sayde with his ac-
 cused animositie, that it pleased him straight without
 further delaye to enter the battaile, assying onelye on
 iustice. That maye not bee (answered the Kinges
 sell, who all were agreed against him) for there is an
 late law in this Kingdome (since Xentho the first King
 thereof

of the Mi

thereof was challenge
 bate his proper cause
 the limited time pzeff
 right him or else saylin
 subiect to the Lawes in
 strangers of such ren
 Greeke) and the findin
 ing so difficult, great i
 on both I will enter th
 ous King of Cremania

Well doest thou kn
 thy sake to vpolate the
 ed, and so because thou
 the so vehemently in
 not to it (replied the a
 solēt pride that hither
 but a barking rauenin
 ling against the splent
 was the Pagan that he
 not greued the Prince
 him. Betwene the ste
 conuayed to prison, fi
 their defendours. So
 rowe his mouth hee fo
 intreating the King to
 hee so feared the Prin
 grē thereto, perswad
 surer that way.

Neuer was gelded
 himselfe in all his lyfe
 that instant, to see hi
 which made him roar
 that as hee hadde also
 passe the limittes of
 on hee let slippe some
 tioneth saue that he w

The second Booke of the third P

what the Whisitions, and Chirurgions vze
for his health. All the night walked he
remedie he might deuise to yssue forth to be
the villaines: he was about to cast himselfe
; but it was timeritie, considering the heig
guish was Pollidolpho, yet something mo
h Alanios kindnes that reputed him a per
and high esteeme. In nothing could he b
n that extremitie. But the beauteous Ve
ottes deuised (moued with pure loue) to
pzeuayle. None was good, nothing pl
itude that was her comfort, and if merily
father it was with dissembling her inwa
was the greatest that euer Ladie did indu
gentlewoman shee disburdened her
and dou. perswaded her she should suffer
ch she thought could be but little, how gr
ing for remedie & release of those Princes
uld hazard lyfe and honour. Sixe dayes
past, and no knight appeared to accept
e in the Court durst doe it, iudging mad
it against the father and Son.
e fewe were in the Court but lam. d
ertaine death of the Knightes, and aboue
wing what meanes to deuise to eschew
still insisted in his rygorous obstinacie,
continually perswasions of that tr. geron
ia. Her grieve did the fayre Venus
but alone she shed more teares the y fir
she bewayled the requies of her de
er noone with. discrete Faulsta shee
n, (where one but she and her Damo
in in. ie of solace) to giue her thoug
far vnbydded persiueneffe, which
was assayed.

s their good Fortune, (by the Fates ap

ns bzged it so be-
ed he imagining
h to be reuenged
nselfe downe the
he height. In no
ng moze comfort
a person both of
ld he better shew
us Venus a thou-
e) to see if anye
ing pleased her,
merily she looked
inward greefe,
d indure. With
d her heart, for
suffer some dan-
w great soener,
inces, for whom
dayes of the thir-
cept the battle,
madnesse to vn-

d the lamen-
boue. Al-
hewe it
ari, bzged ther-
gerous Lindauo
us smother out-
y first of y name
er beare Adonis.
hee walked into
damozeills vled to
houghtes the ly-
ich by so manye

s appointed that
those

of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

those Princes should not so iniustly dye) to leade them to
a place where they satte downe hard by certaine thicke gro-
wen bushes, and as Faulsta pluckt vppe some of the rooted
bzaunches to sit vpon, she spyed a great hole like to a Caues
mouth. She was astonished thereat, supposing some beast
or Adder to bee in it that might hurt them: the cause there-
of demaunded the afflicted Venus, and being tould yt, the
amorous Ladye sayd.

Oh I would to loue it were so, that by taking a swar my
lyfe, it would end so many deaths which I indure. There
is no hart longer able to tollerate so much. She rose with
moze courage then her tenderneffe allowe, and taking away
the bushes to see what it was, she espied a Caue that to-
wards the Pallace bended, of such widenes that twoo ar-
med men might easilie pass through it. She expected no o-
ther resolution, for courageously, and with great bouldnes
(for in the end she was in Loue) she entred it, commaun-
ding Faulsta to followe her, for though shee lost her life shee
would know what was in it, and find the end therof: your
beautie will vndergoe too great a bouldnes (said she) and
I would not for any thing we should be spied.

There is no danger to be feared nor yet that we should
be seene (sayde Venus) for considering the safetie of the Gar-
den it is impossible that any should haue come hither. They
had not gone fiftie paces, when they founde themselves at
the fote of a stone wall, yt was so darke that verie litle light
they could see, but yet they felt what it was. They went
abownd, and let go they durst not) to see if they
could finde any steps or wayes in the wall because y Caue
there ended. At length they met with their desire, but it was
so narrowe that one could scarce goe vp. They put of their
Damoilles to doe it better, and the damoelle began to mount
trembling like an Aspen leafe so did Faulsta who though she
helde her Distres be her deue, yet was not able to goe vpp
a step, which were aboue ffortie, and with extreme feare
hauing ascended them, when they came to the top, they

The second Booke of the third

for all what the Physicians, and Chirurgions
hoped for his health. All the night walked
what remedie he might devise to yssue forth to
on those villaines: he was about to cast himself
Tower, but it was timeritie, considering the
lesse anguish was Pollidolpho, yet something
ted with Alanios kindnes that reputed him a p
valour and high esteeme. In nothing could h
it then in that extremitie. But the beauteous
sand plottes deuised (moued with pure loue)
would pzeuayle. None was good, nothing
saue solitude that was her comfort, and if mer
on her Father it was with dissembling her in
which was the greatest that euer Ladie did in
Fausta her gentlewoman shee disburdened h
Thousand doubts perswaded her she should su
ger which she thought could be but little, how
happer.ing for remedie & release of those Princ
she would hazard lyfe and honour. Sixe day
tie were past, and no Knight appeared to acce
nor none in the Court durst doe it, iudging m
dertake it against the Father and Sonne.

Clerie fewe were in the Court but lament
table certaine death of the Knightes, and abou
not knowing what meares to devise to esche
the King still insisted in his rygorous obstinac
to with continuall perswasions of that trecher
of Syconia. Her grieve did the fayre Venus
wardly, but alone she shed more teares the y
did whē she bewayled the obsequies of her
One after noone with her discreete Fausta she
a Garden, (where none but she and her Dan
sport them in tyme of solace) to giue her thou
bertie of their unbrydled pensuuenesse, which
wayes was assay'd.

It was their good Fortune, (by the Fates

third Part

gions vrged it so be-
alked he imagining
vzth to be reuenged
himselſe downe the
g the height. In no
thing moze comfort
in a perſon both of
ould he better ſhe
teous Venus a thou-
lone) to ſee if anye
thing pleaſed her,
if merily ſhe looked
her inward græſe,
did indure. With
ned her heart, for
uld ſuffer ſome dan-
how great ſoener,
Princes, for whom
re dayes of the thir-
o accept the battle,
ng madneſſe to vn-
mented the lamen-
d aboue all Alanio,
eſchewe it, becauſe
tinacie, vrged ther
recherous Lindauro
enus ſmother out
hē y firſt of y name
her deare Adonis.
a ſhee walked into
Damozeſſes vſed to
thoughtes the ly-
which by ſo manye
ates appointed that
thoſe

o f the Mirrour of K

thoſe Princes ſhould not ſo iniuſt
a place where they ſatte downe ha
wen buſhes, and as Faulſta pluck
braunches to ſit vpon, ſhe ſpyed a
mouth. She was aſtoniſhed ther
o2 Adde to bee in it that might hurt
of demaunded the afflicted Venus,
amorous Ladye ſayd.

Oh I would to loue it were ſo,
lyſe, it would end ſo many deaths
is no hart longer able to tollerate ſo
moze courage then her tenderneſſe
the buſhes to ſee what it was, th
wards the Pallace bended, of ſuch
med men might eaſilie paſſe throu-
ther reſolution, for couragiouſly,
(for in the end ſhe was in Loue)
ding Faulſta to followe her, for tho
would know what was in it, and
beautie will vnder-goe too great a
I would not for any thing we ſhou

There is no danger to bee feared
be ſeene ſayde Venus) for conſiderin
den it is impoſſible that any ſhould
had not gone fiftie paces, when th
the ſote of a ſtone wall, yt was ſo d
they could ſee, but yet they felt wha
about (hand in hand, for let go the
could finde any ſteps o2 ſtayes in t
there ended. At length they met wit
ſo narrowe that one could ſcarce goe
Pantoffles to doe it better, & the P
trembling like an Aspen leafe ſo did
helde her Diſtrefſe be her ſleeue, yet
a ſtep, which were aboue ffortie, a
hauing aſcended them, whē they ca

The second Booke of the third Part

so wearie they could not stirre. They sate the houre a while
to breathe, speaking so softly, that they themselves could not
almost heare one another: what shall we doe (saie Prince
esse said Fausta) if in the Pallace our absence shalbe found,
no doubt but it will be noted, and iudged I feare for wanto-
nesse: That the Cause would bring vs (replied Venus) to y
tower of the despairing knight, then would I not care what
the world should say, for he being set at libertie, the same
would he procure to vs all: Such goodnes will not our hap
abode vs (said Fausta) to let it be so, for then who with a
more iust title could bragge of felicitie: let vs rise (said Ve-
nus) for my hart is passing light, and let vs see where we
shall arrive. They went softly feeling (fearing to be heard)
till they met of the same stone, one of the fashion of a doore,
that arteficially was set in the wall: they were not able to
stir it because it was to be opened on the inside of the tower,
though many hundred yeres twas it had not bin opened, & y
was the reason none of the Court, neither knew it, nor any
such thing euer imagined. Lirgandeo saith it was made by
a Persian king, that fell in loue with Licida daughter of Xa-
cho, who being lodged in the tower, and seeing her walke
in that garden, with the force of his armes brake downe the
wall till he came to the earth, where with more facilitie he
pursued his amorous intent, making then that Cause
as they found it, by which meanes he obtayned the Ladies
will, bringing her that way vnto his chamber, till he found
time to steale her and conuay her to his Kingdome. To this
rape both Astildo attribute the cause of Persias desolation, by
the Father of the stolen Ladie. This was the doore that now
the Ladies found where attentiuely hearkening (because it
was very nigh to the bedde of the despairing knight) they
might heare him with Millions of sighes complaine him in
this manner.

Q Quene of Lyra (said the Prince of Grecia) how maist
thou now be contented, seeing thy crueltie hath absented
me from my countrey. and thy deuiue presence, which was
the

of the Mirror

the thing whose power
that now doth keepe me
wounded, sicke and we
preuaile to liberate him
that only wishes a to
deare Father Galtenor,
best thewe thy loue to
sometime diddest put t
whole Kingdome. Re-
life for thy content. I o
that I maye bee reuer
which if I might obta
thing that I haue susta
and also teach them ho
knights.

Q Emperour Treba
you my anguish and gr
Q Claridiana my souer
you that your beloued
mitted by a mortall m
on your armes to rescu
the great Alphebo my
posed that none did h
rie well bee, for that
rest. Great ioye com
ing out of so leaue a
waye they myght free
Prince Pollidolpho: y
ding hee was so high
to those that with the
the spacious world.

Q Of him (being so y
they had scene was su
esteame him for the b
euer guarded smoozd

Mirroure of Knighthood.

power might nourish an abhored life,
keepe me inclosed within a stonie limmit,
and weake, and where none with helpe can
ste him from a cruell and shamefull death,
a tormented life to adore thy beautie? D
tenor, this is the time wherein thou shoul
ne towarde thy Sonne, on whome thou
put thy glozie, and the recouerie of thy
e. Regard with what will I hazarded my
f. I onlie require thee to set me at libertie,
reuenged on these villanous Traitors:
t obtaine, I would not then greue at any
sustayned, so I might make them know,
em howe they should entertaine valiant
Trebatio my Lord and Grandfire, knewe
and græfe, I know you would reuenge it.
soueraigne Lady Mother, who would tell
oued Son hath but xiiii. daies of life lim
ll man, with lyke affection would you put
a rescue me, as when you went to seeke
o my louing Father, The Prince sup
did heare him, which in dede might be
that Tower was hygher then any of the
e conceaued the Ladyes with the synd
ue an aduenture, and seeing how that
t free him, that hee might so doe by the
ho: yet most woundered, that vnderstan
highe a Prince, Nephewe and Sonne
their haughtie dedes hadde illustrated
d. (so young) they had not heard, but what
as sufficient reason for to mooue them to
the best and moste worthiest knight that
dord. Returne we nowe my Faula (sayd
the

Part

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

all in, sayd. Do
a life, and we
what rich it might
n thos might be yd
Tower the Prince
esse ameanes he had
ed wit him, noz gine
valour required, sup
t then is, he replied.
and pccellent Prin
ouldenot toled ge an
aue solkinde remem
her ht so vnfortun
whi. selfe any more
saulla hushere shold
Thousaze then I haue
er whtur brauteous
appenepetual, pro
he wor which to mee
ie were found hither
noz nonhe, but the de
ertake he grieve I co
Ticris be with my
able celalking to take
not knolofell, amonge
he Kingerto arrtues.
o with hi from hence,
f Syconore, deferring
wardly, you so bitter
id whi of the Quene
One afti of Grecia. It
a Garde to ill repayd:
post the Louers inci
ertie of
way - content is ab
At wa these wzengs
are

are done we will, tell it. Greatly discontented rested the Prince
hearing that the Lady knewe him but hee dissembled it re
plying. Well doe you expresse the greatnes of your Pro
bilitie (molte gracious Princesse) hauing procured lyfe to
him that incertaine hadde it, your owne affaires haue yet
therein done, for it shall not leaue be employed then in your
service, though to deserue so great an aduenture as you this
day haue discovered, a higher person should haue been kno
wen, to celebrate with her due honour that it merits. Touch
ing the rest highlye shall I rest satisfied, in revealing my
name and estate to none, the which I haue tould onely to
my friende the Prince Pollidolpho of Croatia, which is hee
that is in prison, and yet that were pleasant, hadde hee but
promise of some remedy, not of libertie, but of comfort, pa
tiently to beare the bondes wherein your perfections haue
inthyald him.

More liuelier colours then the blushing Rose posselt in
her chiefe pride, be paynted the deuine heauen of the beau
teous Lady hearing what the Prince had sayde, shee would
not displease him through want of hope, and therefore thus
replied. I would not haue had you (despayring Knight)
that with such despaire, and to my cost, tell me the ametic
twirt you and that Prince: But because you shall not saye
that in Esclauonia there raigneth crueltie equall to that in
Greece, let vs order your libertie, for after it shall not want
for your friende, for I will neither nowe nor at anye time
gaine-saie what you shall appoint mee, because a knight
of your valour and qualitie will not procure but what may
most glorifie my honour. The ioyfullest in the worlde
would the Prince kisse her hands, accompting Pollidolpho
the happpest in the vniuerse, hauing with so fewe soules
tormentes and heart oppressing passions of a despayring
Melancholie loue, obtayned the most rarest Jewell on the
earth, the purest fayrest, and most immaculte.

You see valyant Prince (sayde the Ladies) what the
kinge my father hath ordayned, and the danger that you

Prince
d it ree
ar For
lyfe to
ue you
your
ou this
n kno
Lous
ng my
lye to
is hee
ee but
et, pa
haue

fest in
beau
would
e thus
ight)
metie
t saye
at in
want
e time
night
t may
ould
olpho
oules
ying
on the
at the
t your
lyfe

the third Part

venture as this, could
as ours, and we will
(ince) the doze may be
tie, and will do it, be-
we be heard. Then
we not what it is that
us selfe hath discoue-
of such perill. There
he despairer armoz, for
wozld I lue assured,
let vs away, (replied
h in Loue most force.
yzing knight we neede
ceffe I doe not doubt,
es (answered Venus)
nning to discouer vn-
ey came away, & that
de the Caue, they co-
iers the best that they
hey thought they wals
those græne arboz:
ell to speake with Pa-
red, for she spied him
lay. Shee made him
nd because shee would
they might be espied,
d vs the Princesse my
at of thy Lord that we
e pzocured a meanes
s to shew vs to day a
reacheth to thy Lords
hough we heard him
edy know how great
me what to my Lady
t liberty, that he may
ither aduertise him,
but

of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

but onely open the doze which in the same wall you shall
of stone, that we may on the sodian enter, for it will so grea
ly please my Lady Venus. And because this matter requir
a secret breuitie no more, but, that this night after y Ch
rurgions be gone, stay you with a light, to doe what I tel
for we will not fayle you. The discretè Palisandro toke h
leauē, pondering that matter in his minde, as the waigh
thereof required. In the end he resolved to doe yt, vnable
imagine that in so great a Princesse there shoulde bee any
thingement contrary to what shee sayde. After the Prin
was drested Palisandro shut the dozes verge fast, to execut
his appointment, and hee found their tale to bee true whic
not a little gladded him, seeing that his Maister might tha
way goe forth: hee opened the wall, and set a taper by h
Maisters bed side, that y Ladies might see him, & was abou
himselfe to goe mēte them, but he feared to displease them
They stayed not long, for the household being withdrowne
with Summer garmēts, they descended to the garden, ma
king fast the doze after them. The Princesse Venus woar
a Damaske mantle imbroydered with gold, cast ouer a pet
coate of russet Satten layd about with golden lace, vpon h
haire she had a Lawne of curled Cyppers, which so reuerber
rated the beames of her owne beauty vpon her selfe, that n
knight (not louing Archifilora) could haue the hart to fo
get her. In beauty onely thze contayned y wozld to equa
her, & yet they knew not any aduantage ouer her, the first
reized Lady, Rosamond & Liriana. They went more nym
bler by reason of their light garments, which made the eas
er mount to the faire head whence thzough the tapestry tha
hung before the doze, they. d the light. With a thousā
imaginationes were the Prince & Palisandro expecting wh
might fall out. At the entring they started as it were wyl
seare in such sort that they made not so little noise but th
Prince might heare it, he feared some treasō, and though h
had no armoz at the time that he would leape out of his be
entred with her damozell that excellent Ladye who with

shall see
o great
quires
r y Chi
t I tell,
oke his
waighte
able to
ee anye
Prince
execute
e which
ht that
r by his
s about
e them.
awne,
n, mas
woare
a peti
pon her
euerbe
that no
t to for
equall
e first y
e myn
hē easi
ry that
housād
g what
e wyth
but the
ough he
is bed,
with a
ioyfull

The second

lyse incurres, yf for all
are in you will underta
I will prouide you wi
whole Kingdome doth
rest I refer to your disc
I had imagined that F
bed in your stæde, (for
pleasure you, and we w
of death, because the k
neyther for the challen
sider whether this cou
some other better. Th
red the Prince, farr m
tion: why then (sayd
ro we we will be with
publish what I said of
that by your valour yo
Court, that will helpe
and I will procure tha
right of the battaile to
she imbrazt him, (whi
it beene done to him th
with her beloved Fau
the night, with repeti
ties.

The next daye Pal
(though fayned) the g
pairing knight, and
by reason he was on t
there were that great
blinded with a fawni
shew it, seemed then
with his vniust acte,
royke Prince (reseru
reioyced at their folli
ginē to his counterfe

571
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

lent perfections of the Princesse Venus, iudging y none other but to her selfe due. Who with the grea possible past the day imagining in what imminent e had put the Prince, though the confidence she re his valour, made her moze assured then the cause re

When they saue tyme the twoo Ladyes by little e, conuayed the armour into the Garden, that the night there arme him, and also his swoord which demaunded of her Uncle, onely that she desired to be e brightnesse, that being drauen it yelded: he gaue t thinking on the good hee did, for had it bene with r he could not but hardly escape in y battaile. They to the toppe of the tower, where the lustie youth ex em in his apparell, and so strong that in all his life o not when better he felt himselfe, so great was his had to be reuenged on those Traitors. The Ladie o him with these words.

night I so feared yeaster-days combate, because I our-lesse, that I durst not come vnto the second w n, though in your presence mine will but little pre Therefore I will giue you your swoord, for it was full it shoulde come to another Maister hauing been e Princes, because it were so to wzonge him. Grea at it now receaues (deuine Ladye answered hee) ing been in your beauteous handes, it shoulde come t vnfortunatest in y worlde wide continent. Pame that fearefull Epetithe (sayde she) for you make me ou are ill conditioned to loue, one of the worst parts in any gallant, for he, that the power of disfaour o deny y acknowledgmēt of his fortune in his good ment is the apparent witnessing, hee not so much his Ladye as hee ought, for if she liues beloued, a t at their handes must bee accompted a greate fa

ercellent beautye (replied the Prince) hath greate and I confesse my fault, for all it proceeded from an

The secon

ioyfull countenance
you thinke (for I might
not come to receaue
be deuided there tho
therof, to take the g
admired not onely o
to come thither. W
him her handes, wh
posing he was before
Such am I behould
resse) since it is the ca
eternall duty to you
bance, the which be
nate as my selfe, I
then that I heretofor
be strength to aduanc
promised: I neuerth
selfe dispose, which t
curing yours therel
would be exceeding t
to bring you: No o
fire I was to see you
ceaued, imagining h
fathers offered by
the ay into my Ga
certaine bushes wee
I lost all feare with t
that I past the same
our coming againe
ly complaine, that I
of Lyra, whether the
ioyes mee to see you
Stormes are they to
dent, still pretending

If therefore in th
sent you will receaue

od.

ife.

red Venus) to
of thine with
rō prizon that
it leaue me in
either for my
stresse. I will
it, why ther
to craue a li
ie me with a
a hart with
shall see the
to wrong the
happe to see
not (deuine
e in making
d if because
ell an exile:
to languish
not behould
res of mine
t to lighten
tie, I want
rnesses, cō
o them vn
soule, the
s among a
th funerall

h different
in his La
might cō
tentedly

The second Booke of the third Part

amorous passion. Whatsoever how great soever, (said the Ladie) proceeding from Love, is worthy of pardon, for none that truly loves is subject to any on the earth but to the thing loved, which is esteemed for life, reputed for a lawe, honoured as a King, and obeyed as a Lord: and since in love nothing is required but a perpetuall acknowledgement thereof, here let vs no longer stay, but instruct Fausta in what she hath to doe. Palisandro shall doe that (replied the Prince) who must stay with her, suffering none to come in with any light, and when the challenge is knowne, then publish my extremitie to be most.

Whereupon descended the two chiefe Beauties of the world into the garden, where (O Archysilora who shouldest haue told thee so, with what grace wouldest thou haue heard it:) is it possible thou shouldest be so carelesse, as not to respect the loyaltie of the Crake Prince, who being alone with her that challenged equalitie of thee, remembred nothing but the battaile, armes and horse chiefly? She gaue him a steeled temper one of the best that the earth possesse, saying. This (braue Prince) was his that raysted the buildings of this Cittie, of which a wise man told me, that it should come to the handes of the famousst knight, and greatest Louer of the world, and with it he should terminate many haughtie aduentures, and I thinke in all thinges hee did lye, except in this, for comming to your handes the earthes glozie doth ingraten them. It is a guilt (most soueraigne Ladie said he) to end any enterprise, hauing been obtayned, by the wonderfulllest hap ever recorded. The Ladie had in that nothing mislaide, for that (next to the Creator) in a thousand places it did saue his life, the first being in the battaile against the fearefull Ballurdano, for so was the diuinish Gyant called. The Prince did put it on hauing neuer as he thought seene a better in all his life, and thee closed the buckles with more grace then strength. Wee made an end of arming, and his armour being of a rose colour graue with Greene ameld flowers, he rested the best accomplisht knight

1.

us could not

may with
ine armes,
end it with

ighnes shal
ely thereby
ace. for as
participa

ge) it is the
ou tell me,
g, before I
other time
hen it shall
ecane the
ng it must
ame: here
did open,
ng it with

a knight
o toy your
ie and the
ered hee)
at were so
ayne. So
cemenets
into the

od. where
shall me

CHAP.

The second

tentedly trauell and
through like tentpest
a delightfull loue:
uer heard the knight
noise which was a
started up, & by the
viwe each other.
Straight did the G
reioycing to meete
by a happie conquest
was no lesse then th
cia, who by order of
fitie would helpe h
in he nothing erred
minated that battl
maunded the glad
neede, I will implo
only hither moued
tations (bzaue kn
these sencelesse tree
redressethy woes.
(answered the G
me cannot be cured
in such cases neuer
ence,) for sometime
only better to pro
whom the Vulgar
as fauors. Neuer
plyed he) which ha
in middelt of them
so plainly she toul
that I thought it
presence, coming
ued from my owne
dome we are, for
land, & after we w

Second Booke of the third Part

all amidst his greatest absence: hee rose for
arrests hee had recovered the quiet harbor of
ue: Hee closed his visor and went where he o
knight, & having done in his going made some
as a warning to y^e louer y^e clasping his beuer
y the brightness of the Moone they could ouer
her. Either admired the others disposition.
the Greeke knowe the knight by his armour,
meete him there in such time, attributing ther
inquest to his aduenture: for hee that he saue
hen the gallant louer Don Eleno Prince of Da
der of Nabato that fore-saw Claridianos need
elpe his couzen by sending him thither, where
erred, for few else with honour could haue tere
battle. What is it you require (sir knight de
glad Prince) for if of my person there be any
mploy it in any danger to doe you good: I was
ioned to come (replied he) by hearing thy lamē
ie knight) and the recompting of thy griefes to
le trees resolved to lose my life, or to my power
does. For such a knight lesse could not be hoped
e Greeke) although the infirmities that possesse
e cured but by my death. No despaire was yet
neuer good (sayd the Dacian he spake by experi
metimes the Lady giues a Thousand discouers,
to proue her louer, specially if hee bee a person
ulgar sort admireth, & so ought they to be taken
neuer were any I haue receaued (sir knight re
ich haue byn infinite called by y^e name. For the
them would my grieued life finde content, but
he tould me, how little she respected my actions,
ht it was to wronge her longer to abide in her
ming to liue in this country many miles remo
y olone. I greatly desire to know in what king
e, for this is the first night that I arrived in the
we will trace some plot for your remedy. In all
things

of the Mirrour

things I wish to satisfie you (because I iudge your person w
And therefore know you are n
nia & very nere the famous Cit
few daies there hath happened
was the comming of a knight
quilt four brothers that the
from thence he tould him all y^e
zited. So that sir knight the
Chapion must die through the
And imboldened with his Au
night the Citty, resolved to ret
sing, to demaund the combate,
successe considering the aduersa
fortune that neuer is weary to
in my coming forth (having occa
unto a tree) certaine theues did
stay my iust reuenge I woulde h
time bereft mee of my steede, not
Truely (sir knight answered the
balor of your bouity, in hazardin
& though my deserts containes
terprize requireth, I offer neuer
pany you till death, defending an
or wronge, and want, I hope y
meanes or other. I doe not doubt
we haue time ynough, & so he tha
prayles his bounteous offer, whi
be correspondent to his gallant d
the two kinsmen, with diuersity
scarce had y^e golden shephard re
shewen his light but they ryzed,
the Greeke the best horse that eue
thereon (valiant knight sayd Cla
fed to goe a foote and travelling
meete with some to helpe vs.

The second

C

What happened to the
whom he went to the



Bund in h
the might
mous Cit
full kindn
his liberti

his life , were it ten t
ous, or else to take her
(if so she would) and
hopes therof from her
gination of his vnder
quence) could not diu
gest those big bzanchi
nie, wherewith he wa
ence , that the same r
there can be none bei
at the fote of a spread
voice reiterate the rep
them with the fauour
he warbled sw2th thi

What anxi

Or for t

Since my

And my

She is angr

Though he

What r

In the

Who is it t

And do

ond Booke of the third Part

CHAP. XXV.

to the Prince *Claridiano* with a Knight, with
to the Citie to combat against the Gyants.

in his soule till death (Sweet Ladies) did
nightie Nephew of Trebatio leaue the fa-
Citie of Xantho , seeing with what care
kindnes the beauteous Venus had procured
libertie, & so he fully resolved, either to lose
ten times ten thousand times more preti-
se her thence, espousing her vnto his friend
and that she ment it he had receaued some
in her in the tower the first night. The ima-
undertaken enterprize (though of such conse-
diuert him finding himselfe alone, among
anching oakes, from remembzring the tira-
he was vled forgetting his promise of Patis-
ame night hee past vnto the Princesse, (but
being in his estate .) He sate him downe
preading Woech, making the Echo of his
he repetition of his woes, and tempering
auours the Princesse Venus had done him,
this Dittie.

at auails it me to ioy,
Or for to renew my loue:
e my Queene is nice and coy,
And my fauoures doth reprove.
is angrie, full of yre:
ugh her fauour I desire.
What resteth then, since ioy and hope is spent:
in these extreames but to be patient.

is it that lines content?
And doth lead an absent life?

Who

of th

Wh
F
A
So h
dauro
him,
mour
more
thou

We ended say
haue set me at li
hope that I migh
is wronged to be
a perpetuall Ga
selfe to free my sel
imbzace my deat
fore comes there
cence to end my t
no? Turbulent
passions vnacqu
reason he hath, no
Ladie, but to pub
himselfe, his loue
Ladie) wherein I
the soueraigne
this Monarchie is
In that I did pres
in eternall punish
those two celestial
affects, the guidel
my eternitie. Not
der through vnkn
uerling with huge
der their shadve
which a fresh blow
companie of straigh
obsequies intombes
Not farre from
thoughts, for he onl
die, hauing assuranc
The

The second Booke of the third Part

They had scarce gone out of the wood when from the
tie they spyed a knight comming hors on a mighty Cour
and seeming of great valour: Lets returne into the thicke
(sayd the Greeke) sir knight, for if any thing befall me w
this knight, none may witness it but these trees, for so
times for a man to doe such trickes, it is no infamie. The
Dacian turned his horse highly pleased with the knights
haviour. Alreadye approached the knight, carelesse of t
which happened: before him did Claridiano set himselfe l
ing. A fauour should I receaue (sir knight) yf you wo
tell mee whither you trauell. No further (sayd hee) but
walke into these fieldes and run my horse, because for a g
one it was giuen me. I am verie glad thereof (replyed
Prince) for now to a man that hath such neede of one and
a shield as my selfe, and going to so difficult a busines,
treating you to lend it him you shal nothing lose therby,
it wil rather be a liberality that wil more aduance your p
son, for I must combat with this knight, & he onely sta
till I get one. I would gladly pleasure you therein (reply
knight) but truly you demaunde a thinge that neuer w
seen, & I had rather take the battle for you. What maye
be (answered the Greeke) for he hath challenged me, and
must defend my owne honour: If he must stay for you (s
the knight) you shall not want occasion, to gett one by
other meanes, for this is impossible. By patience (rep
the Prince) cannot brooke so long a stay, & therefore you
giue it me, or your life vpon it. With the point of his la
would the knight haue stricke him, but ere he could tur
the Prince had taken it out of his hand, & casting his str
armes about him, he pluckt him from his saddle, his sh
falling from him to the ground: what the Greeke did
an act worthy of Claridiano, for houlding him between
armes wyth a swinge, hee flunge hym aboue 20
res fro him falling with a heauy fall among certaine th
& byers, that before he rose, the Greeke was gott with
Cittie, for quicker then an Eagle taking the shield he l

18871
of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

a horse-backe, saying. Lets goe sir knight, & pardon mee yf
 in any thinge I haue dispareged your estate by my deuise,
 for beleue me my pzent extremetie bged me to no lesse.
 The Dacian could not aunswere him for laughing: but hys
 Dwarfe sayd. In sayth (sir knight) you are so numble in it,
 y I dare say you haue vsed this office aboue ouce. Thereby
 (answered he) maist thou gather in what necessitties I haue
 bin, for in them there is nothing seueral to one alone, & so as
 much was this horse mine, as his that brought him: I am
 sure he curses y Law that any such thing doth allow sayd y
 dwarfe. Yf he doe so (answered the Prince) that of a good
 man might haue moued him of courtesie to haue done it, see-
 ing y my pzent want requested it. And because (sir knight)
 we are so nigh the Cittie, lets not lose our selues, or vnadui-
 sedly cast our selues awaye, by reason I am so greatly kno-
 wen here and therefore it behoues you to speake, yf you do
 not ignore the language, demanding battaile for the ym-
 prisoned knights, the one called y Despayrer, & the other y
 Suspicious. As you (sir knight answered Don Eleno) will
 haue it, so shall it be, and beleue mee, I neuer delighted I
 in any knights company moze the with yours. That is pro-
 per to good men (replied Claridiano) that with their vertues
 adorne him whose parts deserue but meane regard. Thus
 arriued they at the pallace about Ten of of the Clock, when
 the king was in the great Hall, shewing some exterior ex-
 traordinary discontent for the newe infirmity of the dispa-
 ring knight. Then entred the two most graciousest Prin-
 ces of the earth, who with a Soueraigne behaviour hauing
 made their due obeysance, with an audible voice the Dacian
 thus began. It is so little since we ariued in thy kingdome,
 (Mighty king of Eiclaunia) this knight and my selfe, that
 we moze desired thy high seruice, (by reason of y great fame
 that of thee the wastorbe doth publish) then by other means
 to procure thy displeasure. But hauing vnderstode the im-
 prisonment of two knights, we are constrayned, they bee-
 ing challenged, and their owne persons from the fight pro-
 hibited,

oke of the third Part

and rarest Ladies to see by exam-
ing beauty, came glad, vnto the
ighter then the imperiall heauen,
rdiant splendoꝝ of moze dazeling
to eternize that warre. And
ntion & silence awayted the gale
g of euery blow, foꝝ euery one y
from the force of loue. And all in
ich of the two knights should be
vell pleased with their gallant
it with a partiall voyce expected
t least feared was the Princesse
ant accompanied with manye
Apollon shine, had set her selfe
e knights looked, all apparell
r know how much she relyed on
Coronet of her owne haire shee
h a naturall true perfect beauty,
erie sight would not haue made

nded the Dacien) gainst whome
ke to right? And I thinke it a
ruice that shal aduance her con-
serue it, and few or none there
rs. It is so? Brave knight (an
may knowe what fauour wee
se that y common people made
antes, interrupted their talke
ny knights & Nobles to please
ndauo accompanied them, yet
eir heavy weapons, but their
oth had one deuise on their in-
with many Lillies on y same,
ozes, foꝝ such they had need be
ing marshalled the field w the
ts each opposite against the o
ther,

of the Mir

ther, and the Judges t
nature so insolent, that
stay, said: haue done wit
nies, foꝝ longer you are
ning of a pitched field?
Greeke him hauing soꝝt
now thou art in place, I
then arrogant vaine bo
swere, foꝝ he could not h
his horse with such a cur
to armes and valour. All
against his enemy, thin
was kept. But (D yee A
gins, and Ladies of all r
ted with desire haue expe
the sacred sinode of your
lestiall beauties, they be
ble you make them Victo
foꝝ considering the ligeri
on his bit, no maruaile i
eyes, you lose the enioy
Dacian made, who being
was first in meeting of h
moze terroꝝ then the nois
That happened to the S
haue beleued, foꝝ the big
poces, they met so furio
ant with his tumbled to y
The lusty Tyrio, by the fo
wards three or foure steps
auoyde occasion of some d
long wingd hawke, leau
tionated to him, and no le
hart reioyced with the bza
made. All the spectators co
not regarding the greefe th

The Mirrour of Knighthood.

ges tooke their places. Balurdano was by
that seeing they somewhat ouer-long did
ne with your new inuented folish ceremo-
u are about them, then I vse in the ~~warre~~
field: Peace proude hellish beast (said the
g sorted and required for his enemye) for
ace, where deedes must more helpe thee
ne boasting wordes. He would not an-
not his rage so choaked him. He turned
a curuet that aboue foure trebled, bozne
ur. All of them placed themselues to sling
thinking the fearfull signall ouer-long
ye Angels of chastitie, Vesta's only vir-
of all rarieties) you that hitherto disquie-
e expected this instant: now settled befoze
your perfections, in pzesence of your ce-
ey beseech that with all intention possi-
Uictors, with your conquering lookes:
ligeritie of the foaming Tyrio champing
aile if by a little diuerting your sunny
njoying of so braue an encounter as the
being mounted on the earths best horse
of his enemye. They encountred with
the noise of two discharged fild Cannons.
the Sonne which the Father would not
the bigge launces shiuered in thousand
uriously with their horses, that the By-
d to y ground soze bzuised with the fall.
the force of the shocke was driuen backe
steps so disorderly, that the Dacian to
me disgrace, leapt from him like to a
leauing the behoulders not a litle affec-
no lesse the beauteous Venus that in her
e braue encounter that the knihgt had
dys commended him with loude voices
ese that the King and the Sophy might
R r conceaue

The second Booke of the third Part

ed, to vndertake it for the, only relying on their Justice
ny they haue) and not on our weake valours. I am be-
bing to you knights (replied the king) for the kindnes
ffer me, the which I shall not want will to gratifie ha-
occasion to shew it. As for the rest the battaile cannot
nied to any that for them will vndertake it, if they
e to giue their consent, for which let them be sent for.
ight went they that had charge of the Prisoners to ad-
se them: But the discret Palisandro made the kings
he w believe that the Greeke was at the point of death,
stept to the bedside without light telling him what did
en. With no little feare did Faulsta answer, that seing
ould not goe, hee reined his power to the suspicious
ht, admitting whatsoeuer he should doe. With this re-
turned the young man the which the king allowed, &
ly contented the Lady Venus that in her face till then
hanged to more colours then the Maynebow euer had,
ghting for the answer, wherewith she reioyced, toge-
with the sight of her freed knight, who had brought ano-
with him in her iudgement of no lesse valour then him.
Presently came the Prince of Croatia, that was adui-
without feare to graunt the battaile to any that should
und it: he greatly thanked the for what they did, say-
So strange (Wise knights) is this countreys law,
t constraineth vs in necessitie, to trouble those whome
we should desire to serue. It is not any for vs (Sir
ht) said the Dacian, for contentedly we shall die in your
e losing our liues my companion and I, and seing we
no more delay be our battaile straight. This could not
dano dissemble y sitting by the king said. Make not such
knights) to seek your deaths, for you shall haue time y-
y, & yet now knowing you must haue it against me, I
you do repent your foolish hardines. Considering y de-
ee haue (replied the Greeke counterfeiting his voyce
furious then a Lyon) to chastice thy mad insolence we
long. A mighty Wyke gaue y Gyant, going to flie at
the

of the Mirrour

y knights though to his li-
stayed him by his armes, w
appety way had dragged t
& weapons infernall beas
to inspeuse him,) for with
iudge to little to containe t
the in. The king commande
field to stay for y gyants.
saw the beauteous Venus, h
signall vnto her with his g
nod most glad to see the tw
then a thunderbolt past for
to go forth of the Citie lead
fles end) offered them, & for th
all this had the dwarfe ma
onely he was come with D
round about the listes, erpe
accidents deserueth (being

C H A

The cruell battaile that p
and the Gyants, v

There remained
come in all the
tudes flocked to
rare in valour
Schcoles, to gorge their des
haughty warriors. The gal
pastimes, & delights, to lea
defees, y the by their exper
learne the in any schoule of
amorous youths, for y time
forget their lones, onely to b
robate thither came. The ol
prohibited,

irrorour of Knighthood.

his liness cost had not y king & Lin
mes, whom with the fury y possest
gged them after him. Take thy ar
beast (sayd the angry Greeke the
with them the verry ffeldes shalt
aine thoe, such worke we will emp
manded them to silence, & to go vnt
nts. At their going forth as y G
enus, he could not but make a cour
his gauntlet, she answered it w a
he two stout warriors, y more fur
st for wardes. They comanded F
le least that vild people (should at y
for the stay at their meeting place,
se made prouision, because to y pur
with Don Eleno, who on his horse ra
s, expecting the combate, whose ste
being the last) a large newe Chap

CHAP. XXVI.

that past betweene the twoo Prince
ants, with the end thereof.

ined none (Deuineest Ladies) abl
the Cittie of Xantho, but in mu
ed to see the famous battle of the so
lour. The little children left th
r desires with the skilfull blowes
he gallat gentlemē forsoke their ot
learne new wardes, & new maner
experiēces they better (iudged) mi
le of y wide world besides. The you
time (oh admiring thirst of armes
y to witnes the memory of so brau
he old men ioyed to see what their a

Third Part

hat the knightes
 since the one be-
 But stay a while
 lacking his stolne
 more angry, toke
 ayme with hys
 the wide vast O-
 with the fure of
 med the vgly gy-
 e that was bozne
 e stayed it in the
 Ajax: yet can-
 me y easily pier-
 nces on the other
 ight he had slaine
 irt his armour &
 at he thzeu hym
 upon the ground.
 ly with his leggs
 counter, he made
 ot so long stay, but
 the pummell, w
 ecke & head, that
 ery neare where
 . He helped him
 thing carelesse yt
 f his armed scull,
 ed with another
 moked had layde
 o, vpo his front,
 nd.
 place, which made
 es for the knight,
 o doe, with what
 allant Venus alone
 y Chivalries, ha-
 uing

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

uing there none with whom she might communicate them.
 Of higher estimation, (seing what he did) was the knight
 reputed then the Dacian. Who emulating the sound of those
 high laudes, with his inchaunted Romaine blade made a-
 gainst the Gyant, and in his first assault he stricke the more
 to mayme him vpon his sword arme.

That was not a place strong ynough to resist the blow, &
 therefore was it to some effect, for it toke away all his defe-
 sue armour, with a great piece of the maled sxeue. To his
 defence came y Gyant entring with his left foot forwards.
 It was what the Dacian desired: For by his nimblenesse a-
 uoyding the blowe, (for on fote his companion hadd no ad-
 uantage ouer him) he gaue him another on the toppe of hys
 helme. He stretcht not forth his arme to much fearing his
 aduersaries lightnes, and therefore was not his blowe mo-
 tall, neuerthelesse it cut away all the Collet of his plumes,
 and with them, a great pcece of the Burgonet with some of
 his scull. It descended to his shoulder bearing away a pcece
 of the fine steeled Targe, that in stead of a shield he vsed. It
 did not a little auaille him to leaue y pursuite of his assault,
 because y Gyant turning his heavy Semiter, discharged it
 in middelt of his sheelde. It did not cut it, but it ioyned yt
 with such strength to his heade, as if a Tower had fallen
 thereon.

It made him stagger two steps backward. He followed
 him close thinking hee had him sure with a mighty thrust
 of his sharpe sword. Advised was the Dacian, and so expec-
 ted him opening his legges to stande more firmer: all was
 little ynough, for a Thousand signes of falling didde hee
 make: Hee was so abashed heereat, that like a Lyon hee
 turned vpon his ennemie. At once they discharged such
 mighty blowes, that at the noyse all the felde left se-
 ing of the Grekes combate to gaze on this.

His knees bended Don Eleno, thinking y the latestt momēt
 of his life hee so felt the blowe: the blowe that thzough his

1
 2
 3
 4
 5
 6
 7
 8
 9
 10
 11
 12
 13
 14
 15
 16
 17
 18
 19
 20
 21
 22
 23
 24
 25
 26
 27
 28
 29
 30
 31
 32
 33
 34
 35
 36
 37
 38
 39
 40
 41
 42
 43
 44
 45
 46
 47
 48
 49
 50
 51
 52
 53
 54
 55
 56
 57
 58
 59
 60
 61
 62
 63
 64
 65
 66
 67
 68
 69
 70
 71
 72
 73
 74
 75
 76
 77
 78
 79
 80
 81
 82
 83
 84
 85
 86
 87
 88
 89
 90
 91
 92
 93
 94
 95
 96
 97
 98
 99
 100
 101
 102
 103
 104
 105
 106
 107
 108
 109
 110
 111
 112
 113
 114
 115
 116
 117
 118
 119
 120
 121
 122
 123
 124
 125
 126
 127
 128
 129
 130
 131
 132
 133
 134
 135
 136
 137
 138
 139
 140
 141
 142
 143
 144
 145
 146
 147
 148
 149
 150
 151
 152
 153
 154
 155
 156
 157
 158
 159
 160
 161
 162
 163
 164
 165
 166
 167
 168
 169
 170
 171
 172
 173
 174
 175
 176
 177
 178
 179
 180
 181
 182
 183
 184
 185
 186
 187
 188
 189
 190
 191
 192
 193
 194
 195
 196
 197
 198
 199
 200
 201
 202
 203
 204
 205
 206
 207
 208
 209
 210
 211
 212
 213
 214
 215
 216
 217
 218
 219
 220
 221
 222
 223
 224
 225
 226
 227
 228
 229
 230
 231
 232
 233
 234
 235
 236
 237
 238
 239
 240
 241
 242
 243
 244
 245
 246
 247
 248
 249
 250
 251
 252
 253
 254
 255
 256
 257
 258
 259
 260
 261
 262
 263
 264
 265
 266
 267
 268
 269
 270
 271
 272
 273
 274
 275
 276
 277
 278
 279
 280
 281
 282
 283
 284
 285
 286
 287
 288
 289
 290
 291
 292
 293
 294
 295
 296
 297
 298
 299
 300
 301
 302
 303
 304
 305
 306
 307
 308
 309
 310
 311
 312
 313
 314
 315
 316
 317
 318
 319
 320
 321
 322
 323
 324
 325
 326
 327
 328
 329
 330
 331
 332
 333
 334
 335
 336
 337
 338
 339
 340
 341
 342
 343
 344
 345
 346
 347
 348
 349
 350
 351
 352
 353
 354
 355
 356
 357
 358
 359
 360
 361
 362
 363
 364
 365
 366
 367
 368
 369
 370
 371
 372
 373
 374
 375
 376
 377
 378
 379
 380
 381
 382
 383
 384
 385
 386
 387
 388
 389
 390
 391
 392
 393
 394
 395
 396
 397
 398
 399
 400
 401
 402
 403
 404
 405
 406
 407
 408
 409
 410
 411
 412
 413
 414
 415
 416
 417
 418
 419
 420
 421
 422
 423
 424
 425
 426
 427
 428
 429
 430
 431
 432
 433
 434
 435
 436
 437
 438
 439
 440
 441
 442
 443
 444
 445
 446
 447
 448
 449
 450
 451
 452
 453
 454
 455
 456
 457
 458
 459
 460
 461
 462
 463
 464
 465
 466
 467
 468
 469
 470
 471
 472
 473
 474
 475
 476
 477
 478
 479
 480
 481
 482
 483
 484
 485
 486
 487
 488
 489
 490
 491
 492
 493
 494
 495
 496
 497
 498
 499
 500
 501
 502
 503
 504
 505
 506
 507
 508
 509
 510
 511
 512
 513
 514
 515
 516
 517
 518
 519
 520
 521
 522
 523
 524
 525

3
E
6
C
1
1

of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

in our soules (most mighty King) wee greue to
contented thee, yet considering by thy commaunde
wee were admitted to this battaile, we maye
ed: And so your Royall Maiestie wee beseech
e we haue hast of businesse that in another place
vs) you will commaunde the prisoners to bee
s, which to vs will bee newe fauours. Knight
he King) though to your honour you haue ac-
he performance of the challenge: the offence
ted agaynst my Royall Crowne and state, and
es to be determined by my Counsell: where-
few dayes will bee no great matter. For all
cian) was the battle made and you comman-
ners to bee sent for, that they might giue vs
so that by this meanes all is cleared, nothing
be remitted to any Counsell.

replied the Kinge) but the kinnsfolkes of those
demaunde of me Justice agaynst them, which
erued, especially required by this valerous
with his person it were more honourable for
(sayde the Greeke a Thousand times about
em vp stayes) and not in this maner, which
woman then a knight and a Prince. We not
yed Lindauro) before my Lord the Kinge, for
ue you well chastised, according to your
what I wil procure by my selfe, I haue arms
o doe it, which I haue not because I knewe
and dishonourable for my person, and so I
Kings hands, for he will maintayne Justice
t. Well did the Dacian note his alteration, &
th what rage his Companiō met to answer,
because hee would not giue occasion of newe
sayd.

nce) I neuer saw a knight, y while he might
reputation by his owne sword, wold procure
hand. But seing it is thus vsed in Esclauonia
want meanes more cruell and rygorous ere
long

The second B

Beuer yssued witnesseth
sone to rise he had not po
his sword hand vpon the
helme, with a most dang
the sword descending to t
was it cut it downe righ
of male. Trembling like
stode the knight Judgin
ro with the sight of such b
was animated by him sa
foz he purposed to deny t
ned to wonder at the Gr
better sight, then to behor
with he combated and ha
blood, he stayed for him,
did the Gyant (who in th
ceauing the Greekes inte
ned. The furious Gyant
was the Greekes desire, t
when swifter then a bird
make him forsake his sta
costly, for the Pagan being
till then, discharging it w
Miraculously here God d
strucke cleane off, bearing
one, that it cut away par
little on the head, it made
all the place hung the head
nus that in hart shed teare
Princely Champion. He
was not slow noz remisse
ly setting himselfe on foot
was venturous, and that
victory, for it cut him to th
proceeded more blood then

f the Mirrour of Knighthood.

cræke, saying. Now shalt thou see (infernal beast)
deeds more auaille then insolent proud words, &
aist know gainst whom thou fightest, I am the
g Knight. Some feare conceaued he at the name
lfe so sore wounded: But his pride was so great
that saying. When stay base knight, & thou shalt
her heauen, nor earth are able to keepe thee from
which I wil disloynt thee bone by bone. Where
ld haue flung after him (which had bin his death)
unable to support him, hee staggered that hee al
th his head forwards. The Greek seeing it, thoght
e of y victory, & so desirous to terminate y war,
word with both hands, letting it fly at his head,
strength that he could fetch. He mist his blowe,
d in many great grieve, striking his sword vpon
at therein it ran to the middle, himselfe falling
ummell. Very neare him was his Uncle that in
sorrow for it, & so desirous to succour him with
t the Gyant from him, & at two steps was with
at such time as the mightie Ballurdano with both
aised his heavy semiter. He had slaine him, had
ed, who at his armes let fly y venturousst blow
, for it was with such strength that his left arme
ow it snatcht away, leauing the other so forme
ord fell from it, losing the execution of his owne
at was the content himselfe & the felde receaued
yd hee had giuen his companion. But specially
enus, that almost swonded with ioy, not know
knight in the Russet might be, that more fury
hen the Sunne in his hastye course. Who ha
d occasion, hearing the Sonne side waies com
Fathers defence went towards him, seeing the
dy dangerlesse, and as both went with might
and hast, they could not chosse but meete with
, then a blazing Comett renteth through the
oth went to the ground breathlesse, to the ad

The second Booke of the third Part

long, to liberate the Prisoners. Having thus said, the two
courageous Warriours turned about their horses & went
their waies, leaving behind them ynough for many yeeres
to be talked off. Where breathlesse, and of senses tyed, I
am forced to cast anchor in an vncertaine Port, till the ioy-
full calme of new expected fauours (having disperst the boy-
sterous tempest of contrarious thoughtes) shall increase
strength by adding courage to a faynting minde, to gratefie
your kinde acceptances with another part.

— *Dum lumen solari renebo,
Seruiet officio spiritus iste tuo.*

FINIS.



The second Booke of the third Part

mirring wonder of all that beheld the battaile. The furious Giant for all he was maymed, would go to helpe his sonne: but Claridiano kept befoze him saying. Stay wilde beast for ere he returne vnto himselfe, thy head shalt thou leaue with me. He warded a stronge blowe which made him see more starres then did the Heauens containe: yet was it no part to driue him from casting his Herculean armes about him. The like did the Pagan, but wanting one arme, and his mortall wound on the knee, with a trippe he fell with the Louer vpon him, that not forgetting his dagger, three times he stabbd it in his body drawing it forth with his hart blood, Concluding that warre with the fiercest Pagan of all Syconia, himselfe remayning so weary that not able to stand he made a seate of the Gyants tronke, making all the spectators laugh to see what stole he had found. The Dacian was alreedy risen, exceeding glad to see that the knight had ended his battaile. He continued not long with his, for hauing his aduersarie mortally wounded with two blowes he laid him on the ground, & following that aduantage with like kinde of death that the Father suffered, he was bereft of life. Which Don Eleno made cleane his sword and dagger praising him that deserueth all praises, from whome proceedeth strength and victorie. He mounted vpon his light horse that straigght came to him, giuing cause of no lesse admiration at that, then what the Greeke did do, for finding hard by him Ballurdanos steed, that was both mightie and strong, not setting foote in stirrop, he nimbly leapt into his saddle as if that day he had done nothing, which euery one amazedly admired seeing him so sore wounded. They demaunded of y^e Judges if about the Prisoners libertie there remayned any more to do: They replied. No more valiant Warriours, for what is done is more the sufficient, the memorie of whose fame while y^e world doth last, shall euermore indure. Fro thence as they were they rode vnto the window where y^e King was, to whome they made a low obeysance vnto y^e thy of his imagination. To him the Dacian thus spake.

Though